Econometrics March 5, 2025

# Topic 6: DID and TWFE

by Sai Zhang

Key points: This note is on the causal panel data, building upon Arkhangelsky and Imbens (2023).

**Disclaimer**: This note is compiled by Sai Zhang.

# 6.1 Panel Data Configurations

## 6.1.1 Data Types

#### 6.1.1.1 Panel Data

For observations on N units, indexed by  $i = 1, \dots, N$ , over T periods, indexed by  $t = 1, \dots, T$ , the outcome of interest is denoted by  $Y_{it}$ , the treatment  $W_{it}$ . These observations may themselves consist of averages over more basic units:

$$\mathbf{Y} = \begin{pmatrix} Y_{11} & \cdots & Y_{1T} \\ \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ Y_{N1} & \cdots & Y_{NT} \end{pmatrix} \qquad \mathbf{W} = \begin{pmatrix} W_{11} & \cdots & W_{1T} \\ \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ W_{N1} & \cdots & W_{NT} \end{pmatrix}$$

we may also observe exogenous variables  $X_{it}$  or  $X_i$ . Typically, we focus on a balanced panel where for all units  $i = 1, \dots, N$  we observe outcomes for all  $t = 1, \dots, T$ .

#### 6.1.1.2 Grouped Repeated Cross-Section Data

In a GRCS data, we have observations on N units, each observed only once in period  $T_i$  for unit i. Different units may be observed at diffrent points in time,  $T_i$  typically takes on only a few values, with many units sharing the same value for  $T_i$ . The outcome  $Y_i$  and treatment  $W_i$  are indexed by the unit index i. The set of units is **partitioned** into 2 or more groups, with the group that unit i belongs to denoted by  $G_i \in \mathcal{G} = \{1, 2, \dots, G\}$ .

Define the average outcomes for each group-time-period pair:

$$\overline{Y}_{gt} \equiv \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathbf{1}_{G_i = g, T_i = t} Y_i}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathbf{1}_{G_i = g, T_i = t}}$$

for treatment

$$\overline{W}_{gt} \equiv \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathbf{1}_{G_i = g, T_i = t} W_i}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathbf{1}_{G_i = g, T_i = t}}$$

then treat the  $G \times T$  group averages  $\overline{Y}_{gt}$  and  $\overline{W}_{gt}$  as the unit of observation, then the grouped data is just a panel. The major issue in practice is that the number of groups is very small comparing to proper panel data.

6-2 Week 6: DID and TWFE

### 6.1.1.3 Row and Column Exchangeable Data

The data are doubly indexed by  $i = 1, \dots, N$  and  $j = 1, \dots, J$ , with outcomes  $Y_{ij}$ . They are different from panel data in that there is **no time ordering** for the second index. Many methods developed for panel data are also applicable here.

## 6.1.2 Shapes of Data Frames

Panel data can also be loosely classified by the shape:

- Thin Frames  $(N \gg T)$ , where the number of cross-section units is large relative to the number of time periods:
  - unit-specific parameters (individual FEs) can not be estimated consistently due to the short time series
  - REs might be more suitable since they place a stocahstic structure on the individual components
- **Fat Frames**  $(N \ll T)$ , where the number of cross-section units is large relative to the number of time periods.
- **Square**  $N \simeq T$ , where the number of units and time periods is comparable.

### 6.1.3 Assignment Mechanisms

#### 6.1.3.1 The General Case

In the most general case, the treatment may vary both across units and over time, with units **switching** in and out of the treatment group:

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{general}} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

This is more relevant for the RCED configurations, and for panel data of products and promotions as treatments. The assumption on the absence/presence of **dynamic treatment** effects is very important.

#### 6.1.3.2 Single Treated Period

One special case arises when a substantial number of units is treated, but these units are only treated **in the last period** 

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{last}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 1 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

If *T* is relatively small, this case is often analyzed as a cross-section problem, the lagged outcomes are used as exogenous covariates or pre-treatment variables to be adjusted. Here, dynamic effects are not testable,

nor do they matter since the shortness of the panel.

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{last}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 & \cdots & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

this setting is prominent in the original applications of the synthetic control literature, here *T* is usually small.

### 6.1.3.3 Single Treated Unit and Single Treated Period

An extreme case is where only a single unit is treated, and it is only treated in a single period (typically the last).

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{block}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

Normally, we focus on the effect for the single treated/time-period pair and construct prediction intervals.

#### 6.1.3.4 Block Assignment

The case of block assignment is where a subset of units is treated every period after a common starting date:

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{block}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 & \cdots & 1 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 & \cdots & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

There is typically a sufficient number of treated unit/time-period pairs to allow for reasonable approximations. The presence of dynamic effects change the interpretation of the average effect of the treated: the average effect for the treated now is an average over short **and** medium term effects during different periods.

#### Staggered Adoption (a.k.a. absorbing treatment setting)

The staggered adoption is the case where units adopt the treatment at various period, and remain in the treatment group once they adopt the treatment:

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{block}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \cdots & 1 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 & \cdots & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

Here, with some assumptions, we can separate dynamic effects from heterogeneity across calendar time.

6-4 Week 6: DID and TWFE

#### 6.1.3.5 Event Study Designs

In the event-study design, units are exposed to the treatment in at most one period:

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{block}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \cdots & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

There are often dynamic effects of the treatment past hte time of initial treatment, however, the effects might be changing over time.

#### 6.1.3.6 Clustered Assignment

In many applications, units are grouped together in clusters. Units within the same clusters are always assigned to the treatment:

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{cluster}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 1 & 1 & 3 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \cdots & 1 & 1 & C \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \cdots & 1 & 1 & C \end{pmatrix}$$

Clustering creates complications for inference.

## 6.1.4 Outcomes, Assumptions and Estimands

For a treatment assignment matrix **W**, denote:

• the full *T*-component column vector of treatment assignments as

$$\mathbf{w} \equiv (w_1, \cdots, w_T)'$$

• the t-component column vector of treatment assignments **up to** time t as

$$\underline{\mathbf{w}}^t \equiv (w_1, \cdots, w_t)'$$

hence  $\mathbf{w}^T = \mathbf{w}$ 

• the row vector of treatment values for unit *i* as **W**<sub>*i*</sub>

Then in general, we can index the potential outcomes for unit i in period t by the full T-component vector of assignments  $\underline{\mathbf{w}}$ 

$$Y_{it}$$
 (**w**)

A key underlying assumption is the **Stable Unit Treatment Value Assumption (SUTVA)**, which requires that there is no interference or spillovers between units<sup>1</sup>.

 $<sup>^1</sup>$ SUTVA can hold on a cluster/group level, where the spillover effects are within clusters/groups.

In this setup, there are  $2^T$  potential outcomes for each unit and each time period, as a function of multivalued treatment  $\underline{\mathbf{w}}$ . Then, define for each t-unit treatment effects for each pair of assignment vectors  $\underline{\mathbf{w}}$  and  $\mathbf{w}'$ :

$$\tau_{it}^{\underline{\mathbf{w}},\underline{\mathbf{w}}'} \equiv Y_{it} \left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}'\right) - Y_{it} \left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}\right)$$

and the corresponding population average effect

$$\tau_{t}^{\underline{\mathbf{w}},\underline{\mathbf{w}}'} \equiv \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{it}\left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}'\right) - Y_{it}\left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}\right)\right]$$

where the expectation is implicitly assumed to be taken over a large population.

Under completely random assignment, all  $\tau_t^{\underline{w},\underline{w}'}$  are identified, and are **just-identified**, given sufficient variation in the treatment paths. Dynamic treatment effects can also be identified<sup>2</sup>. However, we have  $2^{T-1} \times (2^T-1)$  distinct average effects of the form  $\tau_t^{\underline{w},\underline{w}'}$ , in practice, we often need to focus on summary measures of these causal effects, which requires some addition assumptions:

### Assumption 6.1.1: No Anticipation

The potential outcomes satisfy

$$Y_{it}\left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}\right) = Y_{it}\left(\underline{\mathbf{w}'}\right)$$

for all *i*, and for all combinations of *t*, **w** and **w**' such that  $\mathbf{w}t = \mathbf{w}'^t$ .

This is a testable assumption with experimental data and sufficient variation in treatment paths, by comparing units that have the same treatment path up to and including t and diverge after t.

- <u>Units are not active decision-makers</u>: the assumption can be guaranteed by design (random treatment assignment each period, or staggered adoption with randomly assigned adoption date)
- <u>Limited anticipation</u>: assuming the treatment can be anticipated for a **fixed number** of periods, which shifts <u>w</u> by that number of periods.
- <u>Units are active decision-makers</u>: potential outcomes are functions of <u>w</u> and the distribution of <u>w</u> (experimental design itself):
  - one can define potential outcomes for a given randomized experimental design: the beliefs about the
    future treatment paths are incorporated in the definition of the potential outcomes, the actual values
    are by construction unknown. This does change the interpretation of the casual effects<sup>3</sup>.
  - In obserational studies, one cannot directly control the information about the future treatment paths.
     In this case, different units need to be gauranteed to face the same information environment for Assumption 6.1.1 to hold.

Under Assumption 6.1.1, the total number of potential treatment effects is reduced from  $2^{T-1} \times (2^T - 1)$  to  $\left(\sum_{t=1}^T 2^{t-1}\right) \left(\sum_{t=1}^T 2^t - 1\right)$ . The unit-period specific treatment effects are now of the type

$$\tau_{it}^{\underline{\mathbf{w}}^t,\underline{\mathbf{w}}^{t'}} \equiv Y_{it} \left( \underline{\mathbf{w}}^{t'} \right) - Y_{it} \left( \underline{\mathbf{w}}^t \right)$$

with the potential outcomes for period t indexed by treatments up to period t only. Here, one can still distinguish

$$\tau_2^{(1,1),(0,1)}$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup>For example, consider that in the 2-period case

is the average effect in the second period of being exposed to (1, 1), treated in both period, rather than (0, 1), treated only in the second period. <sup>3</sup>Think about the differences between a surprise deviation from a given policy rule versus the effect of a permanent chagne int he policy rule itself.

6-6 Week 6: DID and TWFE

• static treatment effects:  $\tau_{it}^{(\underline{\mathbf{w}}^{t-1},0),(\underline{\mathbf{w}}^{t-1},1)}$ , which measures the response of current outcome to the current treatment, holding the past ones fixed.

• dynamic treatment effects:  $\tau_{it}^{\left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}^{t-1},w^{t}\right),\left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}^{t-1},w^{t}\right)}$ , which does the opposite.

## Assumption 6.1.2: No Dynamic/Carry-Over Effects

The potential outcomes satisfy

$$Y_{it}\left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}\right) = Y_{it}\left(\underline{\mathbf{w}}'\right)$$

for all *i* and for all combinations of *t*,  $\underline{\mathbf{w}}$  and  $\underline{\mathbf{w}}'$  such that  $w_{it} = w'_{it}$ .

This assumption is **not** guaranteed by randomization. It restricts the treatment effects and the potential outcomes for the **post**-treatment periods. It has testable restrictions given the random assignment of the treatment and sufficient variation in the treatment paths. It does **not** restrict the time path of the potential outcomes in the absence of any treatment  $Y_{it}$  (0).

This assumption greatly reduce the total number of treatment effects for each unit to *T*:

$$\tau_{it} \equiv Y_{it}(1) - Y_{it}(0)$$

where  $\tau_{it}$  has no superscripts because there are only 2 possible arguments of the potential outcomes  $w \in \{0,1\}$ .

### Assumption 6.1.3: Staggered Adoption

In staggered adoption,

$$W_{it} \leq W_{it-1}, \ \forall t = 2, \cdots, T$$

define the adoption date  $A_i$  as the date of the first treatment,  $A_i \equiv T + 1 - \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it}$  for treated units, and  $A_i \equiv \infty$  for never-treated units.

Under Assumption 6.1.3, the potential outcomes can be written in terms of the adoption date as  $Y_{it}(a)$ , for  $a = 1, \dots, T, \infty$ , and the realized outcome as  $Y_{it} = Y_{it}(A_i)$ . There are 2 broad classes of settings that are viewed as staggered adoption designs:

- interventions adopted and remain in place
- one-time interventions with a long-term, or even permanent, impact (where the post-intervention period effects are dynamic effects)

Under Assumption 6.1.3, but **not** Assumption 6.1.1 and 6.1.2, we can write

$$\tau_{it}^{a,a'} \equiv Y_{it}(a') - Y_{it}(a)$$

with the corresponding population average

$$\tau_t^{a,a'} \equiv \mathbb{E}\left[\equiv Y_{it}\left(a'\right) - Y_{it}(a)\right]$$

we can also denote the average for subpopulations conditional on the adoption dates as

$$\tau_{t\mid a''}^{a,a'}\equiv\mathbb{E}\left[\equiv Y_{it}\left(a'\right)-Y_{it}(a)\mid A_{i}=a''\right]$$

which explicitly depends on the details of the assignment process. This estimand is conceptually similar to the average effect on the treated in cross-sectional settings, but with selection operating over both unit and period dimensions.

#### 6.1.5 Conventional TWFE and DiD

#### 6.1.5.1 TWFE Characterization

First, consider a panel setting with no anticipation, no dynamics, and constant treatment effects:

#### **Assumption 6.1.4: The TWFE Model**

The control outcome  $Y_{it}(0)$  satisfies

$$Y_{it}(0) = \alpha_i + \beta_t + \epsilon_{it}$$

The unobserved component  $\epsilon_{it}$  is (mean-)independent of the treatment assignment  $W_{it}$ 

And

### **Assumption 6.1.5: Constant Static Treatment Effects**

The potential outcomes satisfy

$$Y_{it}(1) = Y_{it}(0) + \tau \ \forall (i, t)$$

Under Assumption 6.1.4 and 6.1.5, for the realized  $Y_{it} \equiv W_{it}Y_{it}(1) + (1 - W_{it})Y_{it}(0)$  we have a model

$$Y_{it} = \alpha_i + \beta_t + \tau W_{it} + \epsilon_{it}$$

then we can estimate the parameters of this model by least squares

$$(\hat{\tau}^{TWFE}, \hat{\alpha}, \hat{\beta}) = \arg\min_{\tau, \alpha, \beta} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} (Y_{it} - \alpha_i - \beta_t - \tau W_{it})^2$$

one restriction on the  $\alpha_i$  or  $\beta_t$  needs to be imposed to avoid perfect collinearity, but this normalization does not affect the estimation of  $\tau$ .

Under a block assignment structure, we have  $W_{it} = 1$  only for a subset of the units<sup>4</sup>, and those units are treated only during periods t with  $t > T_0$ . Define the averages in the four groups as

$$\overline{Y}^{\text{tr,post}} \equiv \frac{\sum_{i \in \mathcal{J}} \sum_{t > T_0} Y_{it}}{N^{\text{tr}} (T - T_0)} \qquad \qquad \overline{Y}^{\text{tr,pre}} \equiv \frac{\sum_{i \in \mathcal{J}} \sum_{t \le T_0} Y_{it}}{N^{\text{tr}} T_0}$$

$$\overline{Y}^{\text{co,post}} \equiv \frac{\sum_{i \notin \mathcal{J}} \sum_{t > T_0} Y_{it}}{N^{\text{co}} (T - T_0)} \qquad \qquad \overline{Y}^{\text{co,pre}} \equiv \frac{\sum_{i \notin \mathcal{J}} \sum_{t \le T_0} Y_{it}}{N^{\text{co}} T_0}$$

and then write the estimator for the treatment effect as

$$\hat{\tau}^{\mathit{TWFE}} = \left(\overline{Y}^{\mathsf{tr},\mathsf{post}} - \overline{Y}^{\mathsf{tr},\mathsf{pre}}\right) - \left(\overline{Y}^{\mathsf{co},\mathsf{post}} - \overline{Y}^{\mathsf{co},\mathsf{pre}}\right)$$

### 6.1.5.2 DiD Estimator in the Grouped Repeated Cross-Section Setting

In GRCS setting, we observe each physical unit only once. With blocked assignment, the notation only has a single index for the unit  $i = 1, \dots, N$ . Let  $G_i \in \mathcal{G} = \{1, \dots, G\}$  denote the cluster or group unit i belongs to, and  $T_i \in \{1, \dots, N\}$  the time period unit i is observed in.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup>The *treatment group* with  $i \in \mathcal{J}$ , where the cardinality for the set  $\mathcal{J}$  is  $N^{\text{tr}}$  and  $N^{\text{co}} \equiv N - N^{\text{tr}}$ .

6-8 Week 6: DID and TWFE

The set of clusters  $\mathcal{G}$  is partitioned into two groups: control group  $\mathcal{G}_{\mathbb{C}}$  and treatment group  $\mathcal{G}_{T}$ , with cardinality  $G_{\mathbb{C}}$  and  $G_{T}$ . Only units with  $G_{i} \in \mathcal{G}_{T}$ , indicated by  $D_{i} = \mathbf{1}_{G_{i} \in \mathcal{G}_{T}}$ , are exposed to the treatment if they are observed after the treatment date  $T_{0}$ :  $W_{i} = \mathbf{1}_{G_{i} \in \mathcal{G}_{T}, T_{i} > T_{0}}$ 

Assuming that the treatment within group and time period pairs is constant, the cluster/time-period average treatment  $\overline{W}_{gt}$  is binary if the original treatment is. Then the DiD estimator is

$$\begin{split} \hat{\tau}^{DiD} = & \frac{1}{G_T \left(T - T_0\right)} \sum_{g \in \mathcal{G}_T, t > T_0} \overline{Y}_{gt} - \frac{1}{G_C \left(T - T_0\right)} \sum_{g \in \mathcal{G}_C, t > T_0} \overline{Y}_{gt} \\ & - \frac{1}{G_T T_0} \sum_{g \in \mathcal{G}_T, t \le T_0} \overline{Y}_{gt} + \frac{1}{G_C T_0} \sum_{g \in \mathcal{G}_C, t \le T_0} \overline{Y}_{gt} \end{split}$$

and at the group level, we have a proper panel setup:

$$\overline{Y}_{gt}(0) = \alpha_g + \beta_t + \epsilon_{gt} \qquad \qquad \overline{Y}_{gt}(1) \overline{Y}_{gt}(0) + \tau$$

and the potential outcomes  $\overline{Y}_{gt}(0)$  and  $\overline{Y}_{gt}(1)$  should be interpreted as the average of the potential outcomes if all units in a group/time-period pair are exposed to the control treatment.

#### 6.1.5.3 Inference

There are two ways to conduct inference about  $\hat{\tau}^{DiD}$  and  $\hat{\tau}^{TWFE}$ :

- the assignment process is known: design-based or randomization-based inference
- otherwise: sampling-based inference

#### **Design-Based Inference**

#### Sampling-Based Inference

- **proper panel setting**: it is often assumed that all units are randomly sampled from a large population and thus **exchangeable**. Inference about  $\hat{\tau}^{\text{TWFE}}$  reduces to joint inference about four means with i.i.d. observations.
- **GRCS setting**: one can allow for non-vanishing errors at the group level, but it cannot be done in the two-group case.

**Standard errors** Regardless of the level of aggregation, inference for TWFE and DiD estimators typically takes into account the correlation in outcomes over time within units in applications with more than two periods. So it is **NOT** appropriate to use the robust Eicker-Huber-White standard errors. Instead, one should use clustered standard errors based on clustering observations by units. It can also be approximated by bootstrapping all observations for each unit.

## 6.1.5.4 The Parallel Trend Assumption

The **parallel trend assumption** is the fundamental justification for the DiD estimator. It states that the units who are treated would have followed a path that is parallel to the path followed by the control units on average, in the absence of the treatment.

**Proper panel settings** the assumption is that the expected difference in control outcomes in any period for units who later are exposed to the treatment and units who are always in the control group is **contstant**:

#### Assumption 6.1.6: Parallel Trend Assumption: Proper Panel

For all t, t',

$$\mathbb{E}[Y_{it}(0) \mid D_i = 1] - \mathbb{E}[Y_{it}(0) \mid D_i = 0] = \mathbb{E}[Y_{it'}(0) \mid D_i = 1] - \mathbb{E}[Y_{it'}(0) \mid D_i = 0]$$

equivalently, we can formulate it in terms of changes over time<sup>a</sup>:

$$\mathbb{E}[Y_{it}(0) - Y_{it'}(0) \mid D_i = 1] = \mathbb{E}[Y_{it}(0) - Y_{it'}(0) \mid D_i = 0]$$

alternatively, postulate a TWFE model for the control outcomes, additionally assuming that the treatment assignment  $D_i$  is independent of the vector of residuals  $\epsilon_{it}$ ,  $t = 1, \dots, T$ , conditional on FEs:

$$D_i \perp (\epsilon_{i1}, \cdots, \epsilon_{iT}) \mid \alpha_i$$

From the point of view of the modern casual inference literature, the parallel trend assumption is non-standard in the sense that it combbines restrictions on the potential outcomes with restrictions on the assignment mechanism.

**GRCS settings** Suppose in the population, all groups are (infinitely) large in each period, and we have random samples from these populations for each period. Then the expectations are well defined as population averages. The parallel trends assumption can the nbe formulated as requiring that the difference in expected control outcomes between two groups remains constant over time:

### Assumption 6.1.7: Parallel Trend Assumption: Grouped Repeated Cross-Section

For all pairs of groups g, g' and for all pairs of time periods t, t', the average difference between the groups remains the same over time, irrespective of their treatment status:

$$\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{gt}(0)\mid D_i=1\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{g't}(0)\mid D_i=0\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{gt'}(0)\mid D_i=1\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{g't'}(0)\mid D_i=0\right]$$

an alternative formulation is that expected change between periods t' and t is the same for all groups:

$$\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{gt}(0)\mid D_i=1\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{gt'}(0)\mid D_i=1\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{g't}(0)\mid D_i=0\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{g't'}(0)\mid D_i=0\right]$$

If  $Y_{gt}(0)$  for all g and t are observed, the presence of the two groups and two time periods would be sufficient for the assumption to have testable implications. However, in the 2-group/2-period case, at least one of the four cells is exposed to the treatment, there are no testable restrictions implied by this assumption<sup>5</sup>.

#### 6.1.5.5 Pre-treatment Variables

Time-invariant characteristics of the units in addition to the time path of the outcome are observed, these variables are colinear with the individual fixed effects  $\alpha_i$  hence cannot be incorporated simply by adding them to the TWFE specification. A reason one might want to include these pre-treatment variables is that

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup>the expected change in control outcomes is the same for those who will eventually be exposed to the treatment and those who will not

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup>If there are more than 2 periods, or more than 2 groups, there are testable restrictions by the parallel trend assumption.

6-10 Week 6: DID and TWFE

the parallel trend and constant treatment effect assumptions hold only within subpopulations defined by them.

**Semi-parametric DiD** Abadie (2005) proposed a solution based on **re-weighting** the differences in outcomes by the propensity score for balance. TO estimate the average treatment effect on the treated (ATT):

$$ATT \equiv \mathbb{E} \left( \mathbf{y}_{1t} - \mathbf{y}_{0t} \mid \mathbf{d} = 1 \right)$$

where the 2 potential outcomes  $\mathbf{y}_{1t}$  is the value of  $\mathbf{y}$  if the participant received the treatment by t,  $\mathbf{y}_{0t}$  is the value of  $\mathbf{y}$  if the participant had not received the treatment by time t.  $\mathbf{d}$  is an indicator of treatment.

ATT cannot be directly estimated since  $\mathbf{y}_{0t}$ , the counterfactual, is never observed. For a set of pretreatment characteristics  $\mathbf{x}_b$ , define the probability to be in the treatment group conditional on  $\mathbf{x}_b$  as

$$\pi\left(\mathbf{x}_{h}\right) \equiv \mathbb{P}\left(\mathbf{d} = 1 \mid \mathbf{x}_{h}\right)$$

define the change of y from baseline b to t as

$$\Delta \mathbf{y}_t \equiv \mathbf{y}_t - \mathbf{y}_b$$

then

$$\mathbb{E}\left\{\frac{\Delta \mathbf{y}_{t}}{\mathbb{P}\left(\mathbf{d}=1\right)} \times \frac{\mathbf{d}-\pi\left(\mathbf{x}_{b}\right)}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{x}_{b}\right)}\right\}$$
(6.1)

gives an unbiased estimate of the ATT if

$$\mathbb{E}(\mathbf{y}_{0t} - \mathbf{y}_{0b} \mid \mathbf{d} = 1, \mathbf{x}_b) = \mathbb{E}(\mathbf{y}_{0t} - \mathbf{y}_{0b} \mid \mathbf{d} = 0, \mathbf{x}_b)$$

$$\mathbb{P}(\mathbf{d} = 1) > 0$$

$$\pi(\mathbf{x}_b) < 1$$

This estimator is a weighted average of the difference of trend,  $\Delta y_t$ , across treatment groups: it reweights the trend of the untreated based on the propensity score  $\pi(\mathbf{x}_b)^6$ .

Abadie (2005) suggests to approximate the propensity score  $\pi$  ( $\mathbf{x}_b$ ) semiparametrically using a polynomial series of the predictors and plug the predicted values into the sample analogue of the ATT estimates 6.1. There are two main ways to do the approximation:

- linear probability model (LPM): higher order improves the approximation, but less precise
- series logit estimator (SLE): using a logit specification to constrain the estimated propensity score to vary between 0 and 1

consider  $\hat{\pi}(\mathbf{x}_b)$ , the approximated propensity score, and k, the order of the polynomial function for approximation. Then the **LPM** approximation is

$$\hat{\pi}\left(\mathbf{x}_{b}\right) = \hat{\gamma}_{0} + \hat{\gamma}_{1} \times \mathbf{x}_{1} + \sum_{i=1}^{k} \hat{\gamma}_{2i} \times \mathbf{x}_{2}^{i}$$

where  $\mathbf{x}_1$  is a binary variable,  $\mathbf{x}_2^i = \prod_{j=1}^i \mathbf{x}_2$ , with  $\mathbf{x}_2$  being a continuous variable. Then the coefficients  $\hat{\gamma}_0, \hat{\gamma}_1, \hat{\gamma}_{21}, \cdots, \hat{\gamma}_{2i}, \cdots, \hat{\gamma}_{2k}$  are estimated using OLS estimators.

 $<sup>6\</sup>frac{\pi(\mathbf{x}_b)}{1-\pi(\mathbf{x}_b)}$  is an increasing function of  $\pi(\mathbf{x}_b)$ , hence untreated participants with a higher propensity score are given a higher weight.

The **SLE** approximation is

$$\hat{\pi}\left(\mathbf{x}_{b}\right) = \Lambda \left(\hat{\gamma}_{0} + \hat{\gamma}_{1} \times \mathbf{x}_{1} + \sum_{k=1}^{K} \hat{\gamma}_{2k} \times \mathbf{x}_{2}^{k}\right)$$

where  $\Lambda(x) = \frac{\exp(x)}{1 + \exp(x)}$  is the logistic function. Higher order binary variables are not considered here since  $\mathbf{x}_1^k = \mathbf{x}_1$  for any value k > 1.

**Doubly robust DiD** Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020) adjust for time-invariant covariates in a doubly robust way, by combining inverse-propensity score weighting with outcome modeling.

**Timing varying covariates** With finite T, strictly exogenous time-varying covariates  $X_{it}$  can be converted to time invariant  $X_i \equiv (X_{i1}, \dots, X_{iT})$ , in practice, applied researchers only rely on linear specifications with contemporaneous covariates instead.

Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020) also assume that covariates and treatment status are stationary as Abadie (2005). Let  $T_i$  be a dummy variable that takes value one if the observation i is only observed in the post-treatment period, and 0 if only observed in the pre-treatment period. Define  $Y_i = T_i Y_{i1} + (1 - T_i) Y_{i0}$ . Let  $n_1$  and  $n_0$  be the sample size of the post- and pre-treatment periods such that  $n = n_1 + n_0$ , and let  $\lambda = \mathbb{P}(T = 1) \in (0, 1)$ :

## Assumption 6.1.8: Main assumptions of Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020)

Assume that

1 the data  $\{Y_{i0}, Y_{i1}, D_i, X_i\}_{i=1}^n$  are **i.i.d.**, or the pooled repeated cross-section data  $\{Y_i, D_i, X_i, T_i\}_{i=1}^n$  consisting of i.i.d. draws from the mixture distribution

$$\mathbb{P}\left(Y \le y, D = d, X \le x, T = t\right) = t \cdot \lambda \cdot \mathbb{P}\left(Y_1 \le y, D = d, X \le x \mid T = 1\right) + (1 - t) \cdot (1 - \lambda) \mathbb{P}\left(Y_0 < y, D = d, X < x \mid T = 0\right)$$

where  $(y, d, x, t) \in \mathbb{R} \times \{0, 1\} \times \mathbb{R}^k \times \{0, 1\}$ , with the joint distribution of (D, X) invariant to T.

2 Conditional Parallel Trend Assumption (PTA)<sup>a</sup>:

$$\mathbb{E}[Y_1(0) - Y_0(0) \mid D = 1, X] \stackrel{a.s.}{=} \mathbb{E}[Y_1(0) - Y_0(0) \mid D = 1, X]$$

$$\exists \epsilon > 0, \mathbb{P}(D=1) > \epsilon \text{ and } \mathbb{P}(D=1 \mid X) \leq 1 - \epsilon \text{ a.s.}^b$$

Under Assumption 6.1.8, there are 2 main flexible estimation procedures to estimate the ATT:

1 outcome regression (**OR**) approach

$$\hat{\tau}^{\text{reg}} = \overline{Y}_{1,1} - \left[ \overline{Y}_{1,0} + n_{\text{treat}}^{-1} \sum_{i|D_i=1} \left( \hat{\mu}_{0,1} \left( X_i \right) - \hat{\mu}_{0,0} \left( X_i \right) \right) \right]$$

where  $\overline{Y}_{d,t} = \sum_{i|D_i=d,T_i=t} Y_{it}/n_{d,t}$  is the sample average outcome among units in treatment group d and time t,  $\hat{\mu}_{d,t}(x)$  is an estimator of the unknown  $m_{d,t}(x) \equiv \mathbb{E}\left[Y_t \mid D=d, X=x\right]$ 

2 inverse propensity weighting (IPW) approach, as in Abadie (2005).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup>It allows for covariate-specific time trends but not unit specific trends.

 $<sup>^</sup>b$ This overlapping condition states that at least a small fraction of the population is treated and that for every value of X, at least a small probability that the unit is not treated.

6-12 Week 6: DID and TWFE

Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020) proposed to combine both the **OR** and **IPW** approaches to form the doubly robust (**DR**) moments/estimands for the ATT.

**Notation** Let  $\pi(X)$  be an arbitrary model for the true, unknown propensity score.

- with proper panel data, let  $\Delta Y = Y_1 Y_0$  and define  $\mu^p_{d,\Delta}(X) \equiv \mu^p_{d,1}(X) \mu^p_{d,0}(X)$  being a model for the true, unknown outcome regression  $m^p_{d,t}(x) \equiv \mathbb{E}[Y_t \mid D = d, X = x], d, t = 0, 1.$
- with repeated cross-section data, let  $\mu_{d,t}^{rc}(x)$  be an arbitrary model for the true, unknown regression  $m_{d,t}^{rc}(x) \equiv \mathbb{E}[Y \mid D = d, T = t, X = x]$ , d, t = 0, 1,  $\mu_{d,Y}^{rc}(T, X) \equiv T \cdot \mu_{d,1}^{rc}(X) + (1 T) \cdot \mu_{d,0}^{rc}(X)$ , and  $\mu_{d,\Delta}^{rc}(X) \equiv \mu_{d,1}^{rc}(X) \mu_{d,0}^{rc}(X)$ .

#### Estimands consider

• for proper panel data:

$$\tau^{dr,p} = \mathbb{E}\left[\left(w_1^p(D) - w_0^p(D,X;\pi)\right)\left(\Delta Y - \mu_{0,\Delta}^p(X)\right)\right]$$

where, for a generic g,

$$w_1^p(D) = \frac{D}{\mathbb{E}[D]} \qquad \qquad w_0^p(D, X; g) = \frac{g(X)(1-D)}{1-g(X)} \cdot \left(\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{g(X)(1-D)}{1-g(X)}\right]\right)^{-1}$$

• for repeated cross-section data, consider 2 different estimands

$$\begin{split} \tau_1^{dr,rc} &= & \mathbb{E}\left[\left(w_1^{rc}(D,T) - w_0^{rc}\left(D,T,X;\pi\right)\right) \cdot \left(Y - \mu_{0,Y}^{rc}(T,X)\right)\right] \\ \tau_2^{dr,rc} &= & \tau_1^{dr,rc} + \left(\mathbb{E}\left[\mu_{1,1}^{rc}(X) - \mu_{0,1}^{rc}(X) \mid D = 1\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[\mu_{1,1}^{rc}(X) - \mu_{0,1}^{rc}(X) \mid D = 1,T = 1\right]\right) \\ &- \left(\mathbb{E}\left[\mu_{1,0}^{rc}(X) - \mu_{0,0}^{rc}(X) \mid D = 1\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[\mu_{1,0}^{rc}(X) - \mu_{0,0}^{rc}(X) \mid D = 1,T = 0\right]\right) \end{split}$$

where for a generic g,

$$w_1^{rc}(D,T) = w_{1,1}^{rc}(D,T) - w_{1,0}^{rc}(D,T) \qquad w_0^{rc}\left(D,T,X;g\right) = w_{0,1}^{rc}\left(D,T,X;g\right) - w_{0,0}^{rc}\left(D,T,X;g\right)$$

and for t = 0, 1

$$\begin{split} w_{1,t}^{rc}(D,T) &= \frac{D \cdot 1 \left\{ T = t \right\}}{\mathbb{E} \left[ D \cdot 1 \left\{ T = t \right\} \right]} \\ w_{0,t}^{rc}\left(D,T,X;g\right) &= \frac{g(X)\left(1-D\right) \cdot 1 \left\{ T = t \right\}}{1-g(X)} \left( \mathbb{E} \left[ \frac{g(X)\left(1-D\right) \cdot 1 \left\{ T = t \right\}}{1-g(X)} \right] \right)^{-1} \end{split}$$

Then if at least

- for **panel** data, either  $\pi(X) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} p(X)$  or  $\mu_{\Delta}^p(X) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} m_{0,1}^p(X) m_{0,0}^p(X)$
- for repeated cross-section data, either  $\pi(X) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} p(X)$  or  $\mu_{0,\Delta}^p(X) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} m_{0,1}^{rc}(X) m_{0,0}^{rc}(X)^T$

that is, at least one of the working nuisance models is correctly specified, the ATT can be estimated. This is less demanding than both OR and IPW approach.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>7</sup>For repeated cross-section data,  $\tau_1^{dr,rc}$  does not reply on OR models for the treated group but  $\tau_2^{dr,rc}$  does, however,  $\tau_1^{dr,rc}$  in not more robust against model misspecification than  $\tau_2^{dr,rc}$  since they identify the ATT under the same conditions. Given that  $\mathbb{E}\left[g(X)\mid D=1\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[g(X)\mid D=1,T=t\right]$ , t=0,1 holds for any  $g(\cdot)$ , it must hold for  $\mu_{1,t}^{rc}(\cdot)-\mu_{0,t}^{rc}(\cdot)$ , t=0,1, even when  $\mu_{d,t}^{rc}(\cdot)$  are misspecified.

**Semiparametric efficiency bound** Let  $m_{0,\Delta}^p \equiv m_{0,1}^p(x) - m_{0,0}^p(x)$  and  $m_{d,\Delta}^{rc}(X) \equiv m_{0,1}^{rc}(X) - m_{0,0}^{rc}(X)$  for d = 0, 1. Then

• for panel data, the efficient influence function for the ATT is

$$\begin{split} \eta^{e,p}\left(Y_{1},Y_{0},D,X\right) = & w_{1}^{p}(D) \left(m_{1,\Delta}^{p}(X) - m_{0,\Delta}^{p}(X) - \tau\right) \\ & + w_{1}^{p}(D) \left(\Delta Y - m_{1,\Delta}^{p}(X)\right) - w_{0}^{p}(D,X;p) \left(\Delta Y - m_{0,\Delta}^{p}(X)\right) \end{split}$$

and the semiparametric efficiency bound for all regular ATT estimators is

$$\begin{split} \mathbb{E}\left[\eta^{e,p}\left(Y_{1},Y_{0},D,X\right)\right]^{2} &= \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}\left[D\right]^{2}}\left[D\left(m_{1,\Delta}^{p}(X) - m_{0,\Delta}^{p}(X) - \tau\right)^{2} \right. \\ &\left. + D\left(\Delta - m_{1,\Delta}^{p}(X)\right)^{2} + \frac{(1-D)p(X)^{2}}{\left(1-p(X)\right)^{2}}\left(\Delta Y - m_{0,\Delta}^{p}(X)\right)^{2}\right] \end{split}$$

• for repeated cross-section data, the efficient influence function for the ATT is

$$\begin{split} \eta^{e,rc}\left(Y,D,T,X\right) = & \frac{D}{\mathbb{E}[D]} \left( m^{rc}_{1,\Delta}(X) - m^{rc}_{0,\Delta}(X) - \tau \right) \\ & + \left( w^{rc}_{1,1}(D,T) \left( Y - m^{rc}_{1,1}(X) \right) - w^{rc}_{1,0}(D,T) \left( Y - m^{rc}_{1,0}(X) \right) \right) \\ & - \left( w^{rc}_{0,1}(D,T,X;p) \left( Y - m^{rc}_{0,1}(X) \right) - w^{rc}_{0,0}(D,T,X;p) \left( Y - m^{rc}_{0,0}(X) \right) \right) \end{split}$$

and the semiparametric efficiency bound for all regular ATT estimators is

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\eta^{e,rc}(Y,D,T,X)^{2}\right] = \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}[D]^{2}}\mathbb{E}\left[D\left(m_{1,\Delta}^{rc}(X) - m_{0,\Delta}^{rc}(X) - \tau\right)^{2} + \frac{DT}{\lambda^{2}}\left(Y - m_{1,1}^{rc}(X)\right)^{2} + \frac{D(1-T)}{(1-\lambda)^{2}}\left(Y - m_{1,0}^{rc}(X)\right)^{2} + \frac{(1-D)p(X)^{2}T}{\left(1-p(X)\right)^{2}\lambda^{2}}\left(Y - m_{0,1}^{rc}(X)\right)^{2} + \frac{(1-D)p(X)^{2}(1-T)}{\left(1-p(X)\right)^{2}(1-\lambda)^{2}}\left(Y - m_{0,0}^{rc}(X)\right)^{2}\right]$$

Both  $\eta^{e,p}$  and  $\eta^{e,rc}$  depends on the true, unknown, outcome regression functions for the treated group,  $m_{1,1}(\cdot)$  and  $m_{1,0}(\cdot)$  in an asymmetric manner.

The key difference between the two estimators is that for panel data,

$$\begin{split} \eta^{e,p}\left(Y_{1},Y_{0},D,X\right) = & w_{1}^{p}(D) \left(m_{1,\Delta}^{p}(X) - m_{0,\Delta}^{p}(X) - \tau\right) \\ &+ w_{1}^{p}(D) \left(\Delta Y - m_{1,\Delta}^{p}(X)\right) - w_{0}^{p}(D,X;p) \left(\Delta Y - m_{0,\Delta}^{p}(X)\right) \\ &= \left[w_{1}^{p}(D) - w_{0}^{p}(D,X;p)\right] Y \left[\Delta Y - m_{0,\Delta}(X)\right] - w_{1}^{p}(D) \cdot \tau \end{split}$$

which ends up **not** depending are  $m_{1,1}(\cdot)$  or  $m_{1,0}(\cdot)$ .

6-14 Week 6: DID and TWFE

Comparing the efficiency bound of the two cases, we have, if T is independent of  $(Y_1, Y_0, D, X)$ ,

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\eta^{e,rc}(Y,D,T,X)^{2}\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[\eta^{e,p}(Y_{1},Y_{0},D,X)^{2}\right]$$

$$= \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}\left[D\right]^{2}}\left[D\left(\sqrt{\frac{1-\lambda}{\lambda}}\left(Y_{1}-m_{1,1}(X)\right)+\sqrt{\frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda}}\left(Y_{0}-m_{1,0}(X)\right)\right)^{2} + \frac{(1-D)P(X)^{2}}{\left(1-p(X)\right)^{2}}\left(\sqrt{\frac{1-\lambda}{\lambda}}\left(Y_{1}-m_{0,1}(X)\right)+\sqrt{\frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda}}\left(Y_{0}-m_{0,0}(X)\right)\right)^{2}\right] \geq 0$$

which gives that under the DiD framework, it is possible to form more efficient estimators for the ATT when the panel data are available.

This result also gives an efficiency-loss-minimizing  $\lambda$ :

$$\lambda = \frac{\tilde{\sigma}_1}{\tilde{\sigma}_0 + \tilde{\sigma}_1} \quad \text{where } \tilde{\sigma}_t^2 = \mathbb{E} \left[ D \left( Y_t - m_{1,t}(X) \right)^2 + \frac{(1 - D)p(X)^2}{\left( 1 - p(X) \right)^2} \left( Y_t - m_{0,t}(X) \right)^2 \right], t = 0, 1$$

hence, in principle, one may benefit from *oversampling* from either the pre- or post-treamtent period. But it's generally infeasible to do so during the design stage since  $\tilde{\sigma}_1^2$  depends on post-treatment data. Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020) recommand  $\lambda=0.5$  for DiD with repeated cross-section units as a reasonable choice.

Estimation and inference Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020) proposed a two-step procedure for estimation:

- first, estimate the true, unknown  $p(\cdot)$  with  $\pi(\cdot)$ , the true unknown  $m_{d,t}^p(\cdot)$  and  $m_{d,t}^{rc}(\cdot)$  with  $\mu_{d,t}^p(\cdot)$  and  $\mu_{d,t}^{rc}(\cdot)$ , d, t=0,1
- second, plug the fitted values of the estimated propensity score and regression models into the sample analogue of  $\tau^{dr,p}$ ,  $\tau_1^{dr,rc}$ ,  $\tau_2^{dr,rc}$

instead of using semi-parametric estimators as Abadie (2005), Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020) use generic parametric estimators for the first step, assuming:

- $\pi(x; \gamma^*)$  is a parametric model for p(x) s.t.  $\pi(\cdot)$  is known up to the **finite** dimensional pseudo-true  $\gamma^*$
- for d, t = 0, 1,  $\mu_{d,t}^p\left(x; \beta_{d,t}^{*,p}\right)$  and  $\mu_{d,t}^{rc}\left(x; \beta_{d,t}^{*,rc}\right)$  s.t. they are known up to the finite dimensional pseudo-true parameter  $\beta_{d,t}^{*,p}$  and  $\beta_{d,t}^{*,rc}$

this approach is most suitable when the sample size is moderate and the dimension of covariates is high. The estimations are

• for panel data

$$\hat{\tau}^{dr,p} = \mathbb{E}_n \left[ \left( \hat{w}_1^p(D) - \hat{w}_0^p\left(D, X; \hat{\gamma}\right) \right) \left( \Delta Y - \mu_{0,\Delta}^p\left(X; \hat{\beta}_{0,0}^p, \hat{\beta}_{0,1}^p\right) \right) \right]$$

where

$$\hat{w}_1^p(D) = \frac{D}{\mathbb{E}_n[D]} \qquad \qquad \hat{w}_0^p\left(D, X; \gamma\right) = \frac{\pi(X; \gamma)(1-D)}{1-\pi(X; \gamma)} \left(\mathbb{E}_n\left[\frac{\pi(X; \gamma)(1-D)}{1-\pi(X; \gamma)}\right]\right)^{-1}$$

• for repeated cross-section data,

$$\begin{split} \hat{\tau}_{1}^{dr,rc} &= \mathbb{E}_{n} \left[ \left( \hat{w}_{1}^{rc}(D,T) - \hat{w}_{0}^{rc}(D,T,X;\hat{\gamma}) \right) \left( Y - \mu_{0,Y}^{rc} \left( T,X;\hat{\beta}_{0,0}^{rc},\hat{\beta}_{0,1}^{rc} \right) \right) \right] \\ \hat{\tau}_{2}^{dr,rc} &= \hat{\tau}_{1}^{dr,rc} + \left( \mathbb{E}_{n} \left[ \left( \frac{D}{\mathbb{E}_{n}[D]} - \hat{w}_{1,1}^{rc}(D,T) \right) \left( \mu_{1,1}^{rc} \left( X;\hat{\beta}_{1,1}^{rc} \right) - \mu_{0,1}^{rc} \left( X;\hat{\beta}_{0,1}^{rc} \right) \right) \right] \right) \\ &- \left( \mathbb{E}_{n} \left[ \left( \frac{D}{\mathbb{E}_{n}[D]} - \hat{w}_{1,0}^{rc}(D,T) \right) \left( \mu_{1,0}^{rc} \left( X;\hat{\beta}_{1,0}^{rc} \right) - \mu_{0,1}^{rc} \left( X;\hat{\beta}_{0,0}^{rc} \right) \right) \right] \right) \end{split}$$

where

$$\begin{split} \mu_{0,Y}^{rc}\left(Y,X;\beta_{0,0}^{rc},\beta_{0,1}^{rc}\right) &= T \cdot \mu_{0,1}^{rc}\left(\cdot;\beta_{0,1}^{rc}\right) + (1-T)\mu_{0,0}^{rc} \cdot \left(\cdot;\beta_{0,0}^{rc}\right) \\ \mu_{d,\Delta}^{rc}\left(\cdot;\beta_{d,1}^{rc},\beta_{d,0}^{rc}\right) &= \mu_{d,1}^{rc}\left(\cdot;\beta_{d,1}^{rc}\right) - \mu_{d,0}^{rc}\left(\cdot;\beta_{d,0}^{rc}\right) \end{split}$$

These estimators can be improved to achieve not only **consistency** doubly robustness, but also **inference** doubly robustness<sup>8</sup>. For the improvement, Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020) assume, in addition,

- linear regression working models, for the outcome of interest
- a logistic working model, for the propensity score
- covariates *X* entering all nuisance models in a symemtric manner

which are more stringent than the generic DR DiD estimators, but weaker than TWFE estimators. Under such assumptions, we have the improved DR DiD estimators

• for panel data, the 3-step estimator is given as

$$\hat{\tau}_{imp}^{dr,p} = \mathbb{E}_n \left[ \left( \hat{w}_1^p(D) - \hat{w}_0^p\left(D, X; \hat{\gamma}^{ipt}\right) \right) \left( \Delta Y - \mu_{0,\Delta}^{lin,p}\left(X; \hat{\beta}_{0,\Delta}^{wls,p}\right) \right) \right]$$

the first two steps compute

$$\hat{\gamma}^{ipt} = \arg\max_{\gamma \in \Gamma} \mathbb{E}_n \left[ DX'\gamma - (1-D) \exp(X'\gamma) \right], \quad \hat{\beta}_{0,\Delta}^{wls,p} \arg\min_{b \in \Theta} \mathbb{E}_n \left[ \frac{\Lambda \left( X'\hat{\gamma}^{ipt} \right)}{1 - \Lambda \left( X'\hat{\gamma}^{ipt} \right)} \left( \Delta Y - X'b \right)^2 \mid D = 0 \right]$$

where  $\hat{\gamma}^{ipt}$  is the inverse probability tilting estimator,  $\hat{\beta}^{wls,p}_{0,\Delta}$  is the weighted least squares estimator for  $\beta^{*,p}_{0,\Delta}$ . In the last step, plug the fitted value of the working models for the nuisance functions

$$\pi(X,\gamma) = \Lambda\left(X'\gamma\right) \equiv \frac{\exp(X'\gamma)}{1 + \exp(X'\gamma)} \qquad \qquad \mu_{0,\Delta}^p\left(X;\beta_{0,1}^p,\beta_{0,1}^p\right) = \mu_{0,\Delta}^{lin,p}\left(X;\beta_{0,\Delta}^p\right) \equiv X'\beta_{0,\Delta}^p$$

into the sample analogue of  $\tau^{dr,p}$ . Sant'Anna and Zhao (2020) show that if

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\left(\frac{D}{\mathbb{E}\left[D\right]} - \frac{\exp(X'\gamma^*)(1-D)}{\mathbb{E}\left[\exp(X'\gamma^*)(1-D)\right]}\right)X\right] = 0 \qquad \mathbb{E}\left[\exp(X'\gamma^*)\left(\Delta Y - \mu_{0,\Delta}^{lin,p}\left(X; \beta_{0,\Delta}^*\right)\right)X \mid D = 0\right] = 0$$

there will be no estimation effect from the first stage, with the linear outcome models and logistic propensity score models assumed.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup>This way, there is no estimation effect from first-step estimators, the asymptotic variance of the results DR DiD estimator for the ATT is invariant to which working modesl for the nuisance functions are correctly specified. This in practice usually translates to simpler and more stable inference procedures.

6-16 Week 6: DID and TWFE

As  $n \to \infty$ , these 2 moment conditions follow from the first-order conditions of the optimization problems associated with  $\hat{\gamma}^{ipt}$  and  $\hat{\beta}^{wls,p}_{0,\Delta}$ , even when the working models are misspecified. Hence, replacing the pseudo-true parameters  $\gamma^{*,ipt}$  and  $\beta^{*,wls,p}_{0,\Delta}$  with their estimators  $\hat{\gamma}^{ipt}$  and  $\hat{\beta}^{wls,p}_{0,\Delta}$  guarantee that  $\hat{\tau}^{dr,p}_{imp}$  is doubly robust:

$$\hat{\tau}_{imp}^{dr,p} \xrightarrow{p} \tau, \quad \text{if either } \Lambda(X'\gamma^{*,ipt}) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} p(X) \text{ or } X'\beta^{*,wls,p}_{0,\Delta} \stackrel{a.s.}{=} m^p_{0,\Delta}(X)$$

As for inference,  $\hat{\tau}_{imp}^{dr,p}$  is  $\sqrt{n}-\text{consistent}$  and asymptotically normal

$$\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\tau}_{imp}^{dr,p} - \tau_{imp}^{dr,p}\right) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \eta_{imp}^{dr,p}\left(W; \gamma^{*,ipt}, \beta_{0,\Delta}^{*,wls,p}, \tau_{imp}^{dr,p}\right) + o_{p}(1) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, V_{imp}^{p}\right)$$

and if **both**  $\Lambda(X'\gamma^{*,ipt}) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} p(X)$  **and**  $X'\beta^{*,vels,p}_{0,\Delta} \stackrel{a.s.}{=} m^p_{0,\Delta}(X)$ ,  $V^p_{imp}$  equals to the semiparametrically efficiency bound, and it can be estimated as

$$\hat{V}_{imp}^{p} = \mathbb{E}_{n} \left[ \eta_{imp}^{dr,p} \left( W; \hat{\gamma}^{ipt}, \hat{\beta}_{0,\Delta}^{wls,p}, \hat{\tau}_{imp}^{dr,p} \right)^{2} \right]$$

• for repeated cross-section data, again assume the working models

$$\pi(X,\gamma) = \Lambda\left(X'\gamma\right) \equiv \frac{\exp(X'\gamma)}{1 + \exp(X'\gamma)} \qquad \qquad \mu_{d,t}^{rc}\left(X;\beta_{d,t}^{rc}\right) = \mu_{d,t}^{lin,rc}\left(X;\beta_{d,t}^{rc}\right) \equiv X'\beta_{d,t}^{rc}$$

then the two improved estimators are given as

$$\begin{split} \hat{\tau}_{1,imp}^{dr,rc} = & \mathbb{E}_{n} \left[ \left( \hat{w}_{1}^{rc}(D,T) - \hat{w}_{0}^{rc}\left(D,T,X;\hat{\gamma}^{ipt}\right) \right) \left( Y - \mu_{0,Y}^{lin,rc}\left(X;\hat{\beta}_{0,0}^{wls,rc},\hat{\beta}_{0,1}^{wls,rc}\right) \right) \right] \\ \hat{\tau}_{2,imp}^{dr,rc} = & \hat{\tau}_{1,imp}^{dr,rc} + \left( \mathbb{E}_{n} \left[ \left( \frac{D}{\mathbb{E}_{n}[D]} - \hat{w}_{1,1}^{rc}(D,T) \right) \left( \mu_{1,1}^{rc}\left(X;\hat{\beta}_{1,1}^{ols,rc}\right) - \mu_{0,1}^{rc}\left(X;\hat{\beta}_{0,1}^{wls,rc}\right) \right) \right] \right) \\ - \left( \mathbb{E}_{n} \left[ \left( \frac{D}{\mathbb{E}_{n}[D]} - \hat{w}_{1,0}^{rc}(D,T) \right) \left( \mu_{1,0}^{rc}\left(X;\hat{\beta}_{1,0}^{ols,rc}\right) - \mu_{0,1}^{rc}\left(X;\hat{\beta}_{0,0}^{wls,rc}\right) \right) \right] \right) \end{split}$$

where

$$\begin{split} \hat{\gamma} &= \arg\max_{\gamma \in \Gamma} \mathbb{E}_n \left[ DX'\gamma - (1-D) \exp(X'\gamma) \right] \\ \hat{\beta}_{0,t}^{wls,rc} &= \arg\min_{b \in \Theta} \mathbb{E}_n \left[ \frac{\Lambda \left( X'\hat{\gamma}^{ipt} \right)}{1 - \Lambda \left( X'\hat{\gamma}^{ipt} \right)} (Y - X'b)^2 \mid D = 0, T = t \right] \\ \hat{\beta}_{1,t}^{ols,rc} &= \arg\min_{b \in \Theta} \mathbb{E}_n \left[ (Y - X'b)^2 \mid D = 1, T = t \right] \end{split}$$

OLS is adopted to estimate  $\beta_{1,t}^{*,rc}$ , t = 0, 1 as there is no estimation effect.

$$\tau_{imp}^{dr,rc} = \mathbb{E}\left[\left(w_{1}^{rc}(D,T) - w_{0}^{rc}\left(D,T,X;\gamma^{*,ipt}\right)\right)\left(Y - \mu_{0,Y}^{lin,rc}\left(T,X;\beta_{0,1}^{*,wls,rc},\beta_{0,0}^{*,wls,rc}\right)\right)\right]$$
and for  $\beta_{imp}^{*,rc} = \left(\beta_{0,1}^{*,wls,rc},\beta_{0,0}^{*,wls,rc},\beta_{1,1}^{*,ols,rc},\beta_{1,0}^{*,ols,rc}\right)$ , define
$$\eta_{1,imp}^{dr,rc}\left(W;\gamma^{*,ipt},\beta_{imp}^{*,rc}\right) = \eta_{1}^{rc,1}\left(W;\beta_{0,1}^{*,wls,rc},\beta_{0,0}^{*,wls,rc}\right) - \eta_{0}^{rc,1}\left(W;\gamma^{*,ipt},\beta_{0,1}^{*,wls,rc},\beta_{0,0}^{*,wls,rc}\right)$$

$$\eta_{2,imp}^{dr,rc}\left(W;\gamma^{*,ipt},\beta_{imp}^{*,rc}\right) = \eta_{1}^{rc,2}\left(W;\beta_{imp}^{*,rc}\right) - \eta_{1}^{rc,1}\eta_{0}^{rc,2}\left(W;\gamma^{*,ipt},\beta_{0,1}^{*,wls,rc},\beta_{0,0}^{*,wls,rc}\right)$$

Let  $n = n_1 + n_0$ , where  $n_1$  and  $n_0$  are the sample sizes of the post- and pre-treatment periods respectively. If  $n_1/n \xrightarrow{p} \lambda \in (0,1)$  as  $n_0, n_1 \to \infty$ , then

$$\hat{\tau}_{j,imp}^{dr,rc} \xrightarrow{p} \tau, \quad \text{if either } \Lambda(X'\gamma^{*,ipt}) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} p(X) \text{ or } X'\beta_{0,1}^{*,wls,rc} - X'\beta_{0,0}^{*,wls,rc} \stackrel{a.s.}{=} m_{0,\Delta}^{rc}(X)$$

As for inference,  $\hat{\tau}_{imn}^{dr,p}$  is  $\sqrt{n}$ -consistent and asymptotically normal

$$\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\tau}_{j,imp}^{dr,rc} - \tau\right) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \eta_{j,imp}^{dr,rc}\left(W; \gamma^{*,ipt}, \beta_{imp}^{*,rc}\right) + o_{p}(1) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, V_{j,imp}^{rc}\right)$$

and if **both**  $\Lambda(X'\gamma^{*,ipt}) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} p(X)$  **and**  $X'\beta^{*,wls,rc}_{d,t} \stackrel{a.s.}{=} m^{rc}_{d,t}(X)$ ,  $\eta^{dr,rc}_{2,imp}\left(W;\gamma^{*,ipt},\beta^{*,rc}_{imp}\right) \stackrel{a.s.}{=} \eta^{e,rc}\left(Y,D,T,X\right)$ ,  $V^{rc}_{2,imp}$  equals to the semiparametrically efficiency bound,  $V^{rc}_{1,imp}$  does **not**, where

$$V_{j,imp}^{rc} = \mathbb{E}_n \left[ \eta_{j,imp}^{dr,rc} \left( W; \gamma^{*,ipt}, \beta_{imp}^{*,rc} \right)^2 \right]$$

and the efficiency loss of using  $\hat{\tau}_{1,imp}^{dr,rc}$  instand of  $\hat{\tau}_{2,imp}^{dr,rc}$  is

$$V_{1,imp}^{rc} - V_{2,imp}^{rc} = \mathbb{E}[D]^{-1} \cdot \text{Var}\left[\sqrt{\frac{1-\lambda}{\lambda}} \left(m_{1,1}^{rc}(X) - m_{0,1}^{rc}(X)\right) + \sqrt{\frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda}} \left(m_{1,0}^{rc}(X) - m_{0,0}^{rc}(X)\right) \mid D = 1\right] \geq 0$$

#### 6.1.5.6 Unconfoundedness

Viewing the pre-treatment outcomes as covariates, then one can assume unconfoundedness:

$$D_i \perp (Y_{iT}(0), Y_{iT}(1)) \mid Y_{i1}, \cdots, Y_{iT-1}$$

under this assumption, one can apply the large literature of treatment effect estimation under unconfoundedness (Imbens, 2004) or modern approaches (Bang and Robins, 2005; Chernozhukov et al., 2017; Athey et al., 2018).

Imbens (2004) pointed out 3 arguments for the assumption of unconfoundedness

- statistical motivation: the unconfoundedness assumption is logically nature in program evaluation
- purpose: the unconfoundedness assumption asserts that all variables that need to be adjusted for are observed by the researcher
- even when agents choose their treatment optimally, two agents with the same values for observed characteristics may differ in their treatment choices without invalidating the unconfoundedness assumption if the difference in their choices is driven by differences in unobserved characteristics that are themselves unrelated to the outcomes of interest.

Imbens (2004) proposes that is is sufficient to assume a weaker version of unconfoundedness, **mean independence** 

$$\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{iT}(0), Y_{iT}(1) \mid D_i, Y_{i1}, \cdots, Y_{iT-1}\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{iT}(0), Y_{iT}(1) \mid Y_{i1}, \cdots, Y_{iT-1}\right]$$

for population ATE.

Denote

$$\mu_d = \mathbb{E}_d(Y_{i1}, \dots, Y_{iT-1}) = \mathbb{E}[Y \mid D_i = d, Y_{i1}, \dots, Y_{iT-1}]$$

for d = 0, 1, Imbens (2004) reviews 5 groups of estimation for ATEs under unconfoundedness,

6-18 Week 6: DID and TWFE

A. Regression for population/sample/conditional ATE we have the estimand

$$\hat{\tau}_{reg} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} (\hat{\mu}_1 - \hat{\mu}_0) = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} D_i \cdot (Y_i - \hat{\mu}_0) + (1 - D_i) \cdot (\hat{\mu}_1 - Y_i)$$

• **early estimators** for  $\mu_d$  included parametric regression functions including least-square estimators with the regression function  $\mu_d = \beta x + \tau \cdot d$ , then one can use the regression

$$Y_i = \alpha + \beta'(Y_{i1}, \dots, Y_{iT-1}) + \tau W_i + \epsilon_i$$

more generally, one can specify separate regressions for the two regimes  $\mu_d = \beta_d x$ , and estimate the two regressions separately.

<u>cons</u>: the regression estimators may rely heavily on extrapolation, hence sensitive to changes in the specification of the models.

- non-parametric estimators
  - Hahn (1998) proposes to estimate first the 3 conditional expectations

$$g_1(x) = \mathbb{E}\left[DY_t \mid Y_1, \cdots, Y_{T-1}\right] \quad g_0(x) = \mathbb{E}\left[(1-D)Y_t \mid Y_1, \cdots, Y_{T-1}\right] \quad e(x) = \mathbb{E}\left[D \mid Y_1, \cdots, Y_{T-1}\right]$$

nonparametrically using series methods, then estimate9

$$\hat{\mu}_1(x) = \frac{\hat{g}_1(x)}{\hat{e}(x)}$$

$$\hat{\mu}_0(x) = \frac{\hat{g}_0(x)}{1 - \hat{e}(x)}$$

and show that the estimators for population ATE and ATT achieve the semiparametric efficiency bounds. Alternatively, one can use this series approach to directly estimate  $\mu_d$ .

Heckman et al. (1998a,b) propose (local-linear) kernel methods, one simple form is

$$\hat{\mu}_{d} = \sum_{i:D:=d} Y_{iT} \cdot K\left(\frac{X_{i} - x}{h}\right) / \sum_{i:D:=d} K\left(\frac{X_{i} - x}{h}\right)$$

with kernel  $K(\cdot)$  and bandwidth h. In the local linear kernel regression,  $\mu_d$  is estimated as the intercept  $\beta_0$  in the minimization problem

$$\min_{\beta_0,\beta_1} \sum_{i:D_i=d} \left[ Y_i - \beta_0 - \beta_1'(X_i - x) \right]^2 \cdot K\left(\frac{X_i - x}{h}\right)$$

for bias control, the order of the kernel should be at least as large as the dimension of the covariates:  $\int_z z^r K(z) dz = 0$ , for  $r \le \dim(X)$ .

for the population ATT, it is important to note that with the propensity score known, the average  $\sum D_i Y_i/N_T$  is not efficient for the population expectation  $\mathbb{E}[Y(1) \mid D=1]$ . The efficient estimator can instead be obtained by weighting all the estimated treatment effects  $\hat{\mu}_1 - \hat{\mu}_0$  by the probability of receiving treatment:

$$\tilde{\tau}_{reg,T} = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{N} e(X_i) \cdot \left[\hat{\mu}_1 - \hat{\mu}_0\right]}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} e(X_i)}$$

this allows one to exploit the control observations to adjust for imbalances in the sampling of the covariates.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>9</sup>For simplicity, let  $X_i \equiv (Y_{i1}, \dots, Y_{iT-1})$ .

**B.** Matching similar to nonparametric kernel regression methods, matching estimators also impute the missing potential outcomes, but using **only** the outcomes of **nearest neighbors** of the opposite treatment group<sup>10</sup>. Matching estimators often apply in settings where

- the interest is in the ATT
- there is a large reservoir of potential controls

the estimator is essentially the difference between 2 sample means, the variance is calculated using standard methods for differences in means or paired randomized experiments. The biggest challenge mostly comes from computation.

Abadie and Imbens (2002) propose that: again, for a sample  $\{(Y_i, X_i, D_i)\}_{i=1}^N$ , let  $l_m(i)$  be the index that satisfies  $D_l \neq D_i$ , and

$$\sum_{j|D_{i}\neq D_{i}}\mathbf{1}\left\{\left\|X_{j}-X_{i}\right\|\leq\left\|X_{l}-X_{i}\right\|\right\}=m$$

then  $l_m(i)$  is the index of the unit in the opposite treatment group that is the  $m^{th}$  closest to unit i based on norm  $\|\cdot\|$  distance, and  $l_1(i)$  is the nearest match. Let the set of indices for the first M matches for unit i be  $\mathcal{L}_M(i) = \{l_1(i), \cdots, l_M(i)\}$ , then define the imputed potential outcomes as

$$\hat{Y}_{i}(0) = \begin{cases} Y_{i}, & D_{i} = 0 \\ \frac{1}{M} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{L}_{M}(i)} Y_{j}, & D_{i} = 1 \end{cases} \qquad \hat{Y}_{i}(1) = \begin{cases} \frac{1}{M} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{L}_{M}(i)} Y_{j}, & D_{i} = 0 \\ Y_{i}, & D_{i} = 1 \end{cases}$$

the simple matching estimator is

$$\hat{\tau}_{M}^{sm} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \left[ hat Y_{i}(1) - \hat{Y}_{i}(0) \right]$$

the bias of this estimator is  $O(N^{-1/k})$ , where k is the dimension of the covariates. Imbens (2004) listed 3 caveats to Abadie and Imbens (2002)'s result:

- 1 only continuous covariates should be counted in *k*: matching with discrete covariates will be exact in large samples
- 2 if only matching the treated and the number of potential controls is much larger, the bias can be ignored asymptotically
- 3 the order of the bias may be high, but the actual bias may be small if the coefficients in the leading term are small<sup>11</sup>

and these matching estimators are generally not efficient.

One key aspect of matching is the choice of distance metrics, one can choose

- standard Euclidean metric:  $d_E(x, z) = (x z)'(x z)$
- the diagonal matrix of the inverse of the covariate variances  $d_{AI}(x,z) = (x-z)' \operatorname{diag}(\Sigma_{\mathbf{Y}}^{-1})(x-z)$
- Mahalanobis metric:  $d_M(x,z) = (x-z)' \Sigma_X^{-1}(x-z)$ , which reduces differences in covariates within matched pairs in all directions
- metrics depending on the correlation between covariates, treatment assignemnt and outcomes:
  - weighting absolute differences by the coefficients in the propensity score

$$d_{Z1}(x,z) = \sum_{k=1}^{K} |x_k - z_k| \cdot |\gamma_k|$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>10</sup>What makes matching estimators more attractive is that the researcher only has to choose the **number of matches**, instead of smoothing parameters.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>11</sup>One such case is that biases for different units are at least partially offsetting.

6-20 Week 6: DID and TWFE

where the propensity score has a logistic form  $e(x) = \frac{\exp(x'\gamma)}{1 + \exp(x'\gamma)}$ 

- weighting absolute differences by the coefficients in the regression function

$$d_{Z2}(x,z) = \sum_{k=1}^{K} |x_k - z_k| |\beta_k|$$

where the regression functions are linear  $\mu_d(x) = \alpha_d + x'\beta$ 

Imbens (2004) comments that when the regression function is misspecified, matching with the particular metrics may lead to inconsistency.

### **C. Propensity scores** There are 3 main ways to use propensity scores in estimation:

• **weighting**: the units by the reciprocal of the probability of receiving the treatment can undo the imbalance of the covariate distributions conditional on the treatment assignment. Formally,

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{DY}{e(X)}\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{DY(1)}{e(X)}\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{DY(1)}{e(X)} \mid X\right]\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{e(X) \cdot \mathbb{E}\left[Y(1) \mid X\right]}{e(X)}\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[Y(1)\right]$$

and similarly  $\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{(1-D)Y}{1-e(X)}\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[Y(0)\right]$ , which imply

$$\tau^p = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{D \cdot Y}{e(X)} - \frac{(1-D) \cdot Y}{1 - e(X)}\right]$$

it can be directly estimated as

$$\tilde{\tau} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \left[ \frac{D_i Y_i}{e(X_i)} - \frac{(1 - D_i) \cdot Y_i}{1 - e(X_i)} \right]$$

here, the weights do not necessarily add to  $1^{12}$ . One can normalize the weights within subpopulations, which in the limits leads to the estimator proposed by Hirano et al. (2003)

$$\hat{\tau}_{weight} = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{D_i \cdot Y_i}{\hat{e}(X_i)}}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{D_i}{\hat{e}(X_i)}} - \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{(1-D_i) \cdot Y_i}{1-\hat{e}(X_i)}}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1-D_i}{1-\hat{e}(X_i)}}$$

where they specify a sequence of functions of the covariates, such as power series  $h_l(x)$ ,  $l=1,\dots,\infty$ , and choose a number of terms L(N) as a function of the sample size, then esitmate the L-dimensional vector  $\gamma_L$  in

$$\Pr(D=1 \mid X=x) = \frac{\exp\left[\left(h_1(x), \cdots, h_L(x)\right) \gamma_L\right]}{1 + \exp\left[\left(h_1(x), \cdots, h_L(x)\right) \gamma_L\right]}$$

by maximizing the associated likelihood function, and calculate the estimated propensity score as

$$\hat{e}(x) = \frac{\exp\left[\left(h_1(x), \cdots, h_L(x)\right) \hat{\gamma}_L\right]}{1 + \exp\left[\left(h_1(x), \cdots, h_L(x)\right) \hat{\gamma}_L\right]}$$

a nonparametric estimator for e(x) is efficient, ignoring the 2 regression functions<sup>13</sup>.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup>For the treated units, the weights added up to  $\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} W_i / e(X_i)$ , which equals to 1 in expectation, but not so in any given sample. <sup>13</sup>The finite-sample properties of the two approaches (nonparametrically estimating propensity scores versus regression functions) may be different, except for when there are only discrete covariates.

For the treatment effects of the treated, weight the contribution for unit i by the propensity score  $e(x_i)$ ,

$$\hat{\tau}_{weight,tr} = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{N} D_i \cdot Y_i \cdot \frac{e(X_i)}{\hat{e}(X_i)}}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} D_i \frac{e(X_i)}{\hat{e}(X_i)}} - \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{N} (1 - D_i) \cdot Y_i \cdot \frac{e(X_i)}{(1 - \hat{e}(X_i))}}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} (1 - D_i) \frac{e(X_i)}{(1 - \hat{e}(X_i))}} \qquad \text{propensity scores known}$$

$$\hat{\tau}_{weight,tr} = \left[\frac{1}{N_1} \sum_{D_i=1} Y_i\right] - \left[\frac{\sum_{i:D_i=0} Y_i \cdot \frac{\hat{e}(X_i)}{(1 - \hat{e}(X_i))}}{\sum_{i:D_i=0} \frac{\hat{e}(X_i)}{(1 - \hat{e}(X_i))}}\right] \qquad \text{propensity scores unknown}$$

<u>CAUTIOUS</u>: the problem of choosing the smoothing parameters is relevant here too<sup>14</sup>, but here one want to use nonparametric regression methods even if the propensity scores are known.

• **blocking**: Rosenbaum and Rubin (1983) suggest using the (estimated) proposensity score divide the sample into M blocks of units of approximately equal probability of treatment, letting  $J_{im}$  be an indicator for unit i being in block m. One way of implementing this is by dividing the unit interval into M blocks with boundary values equal to m/M for  $m = 1, \dots, M-1$ , s.t.

$$J_{im} = \mathbf{1} \left\{ \frac{m-1}{M} < e(X_i) < \leq \frac{m}{M} \right\}, \ m = 1, \dots, M$$

within each block there are  $N_{dm}$  observations with treatment equal to d,  $N_{dm} = \sum_{i} \mathbf{1} \{D_i = d, J_{im} = 1\}$ . Within each block, estimate the average treatment effect as if random assignment held:

$$\hat{\tau}_m = \frac{1}{N_{1m}} \sum_{i=1}^{N} J_{im} W_i Y_i - \frac{1}{N_{0m}} \sum_{i=1}^{N} J_{im} (1 - D_i) Y_i$$

then estimate the overall average treatment effect as

$$\hat{\tau}_{block} = \sum_{m=1}^{M} \hat{\tau}_m \cdot \frac{N_{1m} + N_{0m}}{N}$$

for the treatment effect of the treated, one can weight the within-block average treatment effects by the number of treated units:

$$\hat{\tau}_{T,block} = \sum_{m=1}^{M} \hat{\tau}_m \cdot \frac{N_{1m}}{N_T}$$

<u>CAUTIOUS</u>: The asymptotic properties of such estimators require establishing the relative relationship between the number of blocks and the sample size, so choosing the number of blocks becomes essential

- *starting point*: a single covariate, assuming normality, **5 blocks** removes ≥ 95% of the bias
- balance check: covariates whould be balanced within blocks
- unbalanced blocks: if the distributions of the covariates among treated and controlled are different, one can
  - \* split the blocks into a number of subblocks if the propensity score itself is unbalanced.
  - \* generalize the specification of the propensity score, if the score is balanced but covariates not
- weighting with modified propensity score estimators: discretize  $\hat{e}(x)$  to

$$\tilde{e}(x) = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^{M} \sum_{m=1}^{M} \mathbf{1} \left\{ \frac{m}{M} \le \hat{e}(x) \right\}$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>14</sup>Hirano, Imbens, and Ridder (2003)'s series estimators require choosing the **number of terms** in the series, a kernel-version alternative requires choosing a bandwidth.

6-22 Week 6: DID and TWFE

then use  $\tilde{e}(x)$  as the propensity score in the weighting estimator leads to an estimator for the ATE **identical** to that obtained by using the blocking estimator with  $\hat{e}(x)$  as the propensity score and M blocks<sup>15</sup>.

• **propensity scores as regressors**: estimate the conditional expectation of Y given D and e(X), define

$$v_d(e) = \mathbb{E}[Y(d) \mid e(X) = e] \stackrel{\text{unconfoundedness}}{=} \mathbb{E}[Y \mid D = d, e(X) = e]$$

given an estimator  $\hat{v}_w(e)$ , one can estimate the ATE as

$$\hat{\tau}_{regprop} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} [\hat{v}_1(e(X_i)) - \hat{v}_0(e(X_i))]$$

There are 2 cases in practice when considering propensity score approaches

- **propensity scores known**: all 3 methods are efficient, do not rely on high-dimensional nonparametric regressions, have attractive finite-sample properties
- propensity scores unknown: require high-dimensional nonparametric regression of the treatment indicator on the covariates. The relative merits of the 3 approaches will depend on whether the propensity score is more or less smooth than the regression functions, and whether additional information is available about either the propensity score or the regression functions.
- **D. Mixed** Neither matching nor the propensity score methods directly address the correlation between the covariates and the outcome, incorporating the regression method may eliminate remaining bias and improve precision.
- Weighting and Regression: estimating

$$Y_i = \alpha + \tau \cdot D_i + \epsilon_i$$

with weights

$$\lambda_i = \sqrt{\frac{D_i}{e(X_i)} + \frac{1 - D_i}{1 - e(X_i)}}$$

the covariates are uncorrelated with the treatment indicator, making the weighted estimator consistent. To improve precision, add covariates

$$Y_i = \alpha + \beta' X_i + \tau \cdot D_i + \epsilon_i$$

which is doubly robust: consistent if either the regression model or the propensity score are specified correctly.

• **Blocking and Regression**: least square estimator in block *m* as

$$Y_i = \alpha_m + \tau_m \cdot D_i + \epsilon_i$$

using only units in block m. One can again add covariates and estimate  $Y_i = \alpha_m + \beta'_m X_i + \tau_m \cdot D_i + \epsilon_i$ .

• **Matching and Regression**: the bias of the simple matching estimator can dominate the variance if the dimension of the covariates is too large, regression can help in this situation.

Let  $\hat{Y}_i(0)$  and  $\hat{Y}_i(1)$  be the observed or imputed potential outcomes for unit i, the *estimated potential* outcomes equal the *observed* outcomes for some unit i for its match l(i), the bias

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{Y}_i(1) - \hat{Y}_i(0)\right] - \left[Y_i(1) - Y_i(0)\right]$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>15</sup>With sufficiently large *M*, the blocking estimator is sufficiently close to the oiriginal weighting estimator, sharing first-order asymptotic properties. Hence a large number of blocks does little harm, with regard to asymptotic properties.

arises from the fact that the covariates  $X_i$  and  $X_l[i]$  for units i and l(i) are not equal, although they are close because of the matching process. Focusing on the single-match case, define for unit i

$$\hat{X}_{i}(0) = \begin{cases} X_{i} & D_{i} = 0 \\ X_{l_{1}(i)} & D_{1} = 1 \end{cases} \qquad \hat{X}_{i}(1) = \begin{cases} X_{l_{1}(i)} & D_{i} = 0 \\ X_{i} & D_{1} = 1 \end{cases}$$

if the matching is exact,  $\hat{X}_i(0) = \hat{X}_i(1)$  for each unit i. Suppose  $D_1 = 1$ , then  $\hat{Y}_i(1) = Y_i(1)$ , and  $\hat{Y}_i(0)$  is an imputed value for  $Y_i(0)$ . This value is unbiased for  $\mu_0(X_{l_1(i)})$ , but not necessarily for  $\mu_0(X_i)$ . Hence,  $\hat{Y}_i(0)$  should be adjusted by an estimate of  $\mu_0(X_i) - \mu_0(X_{l_1(i)})$ . Typically, these corrections are taken be to linear in the difference in the covariates for unit i and its match, of the form

$$\beta_0' \left[ \hat{X}_i(1) - \hat{X}_i(0) \right] = \beta_0' \left( X_i - X_{l_1(i)} \right)$$

then Rubin (1973) proposed 3 modifications

1 using least squares, estimate

$$\hat{Y}_i(1) - \hat{Y}_i(0) = \tau + \left[\hat{X}_i(1) - \hat{X}_i(0)\right]'\beta + \epsilon_i$$

2 estimate  $\mu_0(x)$  directly by taking all control units and use lease squares to estimate

$$Y_i = \alpha_0 + \beta_0' X_i + \epsilon_i$$

if unit *i* is a control unit, or  $Y_i = \alpha_1 + \beta_1' X_i + \epsilon_i$  for the treated units<sup>16</sup>.

3 estimate the same regression function for the controls, but using **only those that are used as matches** for the treated units with weights corresponding to the number of times a control observation is used as a match.

<u>CAUTIOUS</u>: This approach can be less efficient due to dropping some control observations, but can likely avoid including outliners.

**E. Bayesian** Bayesian approaches have not been applied in estimating ATE under unconfoundedness. They can be useful for a number of reasons,

- high-dimensionality: Bayesian methods would allow researchers to include covariates with more or less informative prior distributions.
- missing-at-random (MAR): multiple imputation methods often rely on a Bayesian approach for missing data.

### **Estimating variances**

for population ATE, the variance of efficient estamators is

$$V^{P} = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{\sigma_{1}^{2}(X)}{e(X)} + \frac{\sigma_{0}^{2}(X)}{1 - e(X)} + (\mu_{1}(X) - \mu_{0}(X) - \tau)^{2}\right]$$

which can be estimated by

- 1 brute force: estimate all 5 components  $\sigma_0^2(x)$ ,  $\sigma_1^2(x)$ ,  $\mu_0(x)$ ,  $\mu_1(x)$  and e(x) using kernel methods or series.
- 2 either estimate regression functions  $\mu_0(x)$ ,  $\mu_1(x)$  or the propensity score e(x) using series/sieves. This can be interpreted as parametric estimators

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>16</sup>If the correction is done nonparametrically, the resulting matching estimator is consistent and asymptotically normal, with its bias dominated by the variance.

6-24 Week 6: DID and TWFE

3 bootstrapping: given the asymptotic linearity of the estimators, bootstrapping will lead to valid standard errors and CIs at least for the regression and propensity score methods. For matching, it's more complicated since bootstrapping introduces discreteness in the distribution, which will lead to ties.

• for sample ATE, the appropriate (conservative) variance is

$$V^{S} = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{\sigma_1^2(X)}{e(X)} + \frac{\sigma_0^2(X)}{1 - e(X)}\right]$$

which can be estimated by

- 1 estimating the conditional moments of the outcome distributions, with the accompanying inherent difficulties.
- 2 matching variance estimator<sup>17</sup>: the key is to obtain a close-to-unbiased estimator for  $\sigma_w^2(x)$ . Suppose units i and j have X = x, then an unbiased estimator for  $\sigma_1^2(x)$  is

$$\hat{\sigma}_1^2(x) = \frac{1}{2}(Y_i - Y_j)^2$$

this matching doesn't need to be exact, one can use the closest match within the set of units with the same treatment indicator. Let  $v_m(i)$  be the m-th closest unit to i with the same treatment indicator  $W_{v_m(i)} = W_i$  and

$$\sum_{l|W_l=l,l\neq i}\mathbf{1}\left\{\|X_l-x\|\leq \left\|X_{v_m(i)}-x\right\|\right\}=m$$

which gives M units with the same treatment indicator and approximately the same values for the covariates. The sample variance of the outcome variable for these M units can then be used to estimate  $\sigma_1^2(x)$ , and similarly for the control variance function  $\sigma_0^2(x)$ .

3 estimate the variance of the ATE as

$$\hat{V}^{S} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \left( \frac{\hat{\sigma}_{1}^{2}(X_{i})}{\hat{e}(X_{i})} + \frac{\sigma_{0}^{2}(\hat{X}_{i})}{1 - \hat{e}(X_{i})} \right)$$

for matching estimators, even estimation of the propensity score can be avoided:

$$\hat{V}^{E} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \left( 1 + \frac{K_{M}(i)}{M} \right) \hat{\sigma}_{W_{i}}^{2}(X_{i})$$

where M is the number of matches and  $K_M(i)$  is the number of times unit i is used as a match.

**Assessing the assumptions** There assumption of unconfoundedness is not directly testable, since the distribution of Y(0) for those who received the treatment and of Y(1) for those who received the control are never in the data. But there are still 2 groups of ways to indirectly test the assumption:

• estimating the casual effect of a treatment that is known **not to have** an effect: postulate a three-valued indicator  $T_i \in \{-1,0,1\}$  for the groups of ineligibles, eligible non-participants and participants, and treatment indicator  $W_i = \mathbf{1}\{T_i = 1\}$ . The extended unconfoundedness assumption is

$$Y_i(0), Y_i(1) \perp T_i \mid X_i$$

and a testable implication is

$$Y_i \perp 1 \{T_i = 0\} \mid X_i, T_i \leq 0$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>17</sup>The idea is that one need not actually estimate this variance consistently at all values of the covariates. One needs only the average of this variance over the distribution, weighted by the inverse of either e(x) of its complement 1 - e(x).

 estimating the casual effect of the treatment on a variable known to be unaffected by it, typically a predetermined variable, which could eitehr me time-invariant, or more interestingly, a lagged outcome. One can test

$$Y_{i,-1} \perp W_i \mid Y_{i,-2}, \cdots, Y_{i,-T}, Z_i$$

which combines 2 assumptions18

$$Y_i(1), Y_i(0) \perp W_i Y_{i,-1}, \cdots, Y_{i,-(T-1)}, Z_i \qquad \text{unconfoundedness given only } T-1 \text{ lags}$$
 
$$f_{Y_{i,s(0)\mid Y_{i,s-1}(0)}, \cdots, Y_{i,s-(T-1)}(0), Z_i, W_i} \left(y_s \mid y_{s-1}, \cdots, y_{s-(T-1)}, z, w\right) \qquad \text{stationarity and exchangeability}$$

next, the important question is how to choose the covariates, some concerns are

- some variables should not be adjusted for: the unconfoundedness assumption may apply with one set of
  covariates, but not with an expanded set. A covariate measured before the treatment was chosen should
  be safe to include in theory, but in practice, the covariates are often recorded as the same time as the
  outcomes
- the expected mean squared error may be reduced by ignoring those covariates that have only weak correlation with the treatment indicator and the outcomes: including a covariate in teh adjustment procedure will not lower the asymptotically precision of ATE but could reduce precision in finite samples if the covariates are not or only weakly correlated with outcomes and treatment indicators.

the second key assumption is the **overlapping**: the propensity score, i.e., the probability of receiving the active treatment, should be strictly between 0 and 1. In practice, there are 2 main issues

- 1 **detect** the lack of overlapping: there are several methods popularly used
  - plot distributions of covariates by treatment groups: can be very difficult in high-dimensional cases
  - non-parametrically estimate the distribution of the propensity score: one may wish to undersmooth
    the estimation by choosing a bandwidth smaller than optimal or including higher-order terms
  - inspect the **worst** matches: for each component *k* of the covariate vector, check

$$\max_{i} \left| x_{i,k} - x_{l_1(i),k} \right|$$

the maximum over all observations of the matching discrepancy. If it's large relative to the **sample standard deviation** of the *k*-th component of the coviarates, there would be a lack of overlapping.

- 2 address the lack of overlapping: given a lack of overlap, one can
  - conclude the ATE cannot be estimated with sufficient precision
  - focus on an average treatment effect that is estimable with greater accuracy, by <u>dropping observations</u>
     with a cutoff of propensity scores: one principle is to evaluate the weight of each unit as

$$\frac{1}{N \cdot [1 - e(X_i)]}$$
, for treated units  $\frac{1}{N \cdot e(X_i)}$ , for control units

and make sure the weights of all units are **upper-bounded** by a reasonable number<sup>19</sup>.

- **comparing** the 3 approaches: in general, variance estimates **increase** when adding treated observations to a sufficiently-overlapping data set, approximately **unchanged** when adding control observations.
  - regression: in general, adding observations with outlier values of the regressors leads to more precise
    estimates. If the added observations are treated units, the precision of the estimated control regression
    at thes outlier values will be lower; if in control units, such precision will increase.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>18</sup>The test depends on the link between the 2 assumptions and the original unconfoundedness assumption. With a sufficient number of lags, unconfoundedness given all lags but one appears plausible, conditional on unconfoundedness given all lags, so the relevance of the test depends largely on the plausiblity of the stationarity and exchangeability assumption.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>19</sup>For example, set the cutoff as 0.05, s.t. no unit will have a weight of more than 5% in the average. In a sample with 1000 units, with such a cutoff, only units with a propensity score outside [0.02, 0.98] will be ignored.

6-26 Week 6: DID and TWFE

 matching: adding control observations with outlier covariate values will likely not change the results, such they won't be useed as matches; but adding treated will bias the estimates, while the standard error would largely unaffected.

 propensity-score: if the propensity score of a control unit is close to 0, adding it would not cause much trouble; but adding a control unit with a propensity score close to 1 would increase variance of an ATE estimator

over all, **matching** and **propensity-score**, as well as **kernel-based** regression methods, are better in coping with limited overlap than (semi-)parametric regression models. In practice, one should *always* inspect histograms of the estimated propensity scores in both groups to assess whether limited overlap is an issue.

Chernozhukov et al. (2017) propose to a machine-learning based approach. They consider the case where treatment effects are fully heterogeneous, and the treatment variable  $D \in \{0, 1\}$ , and model random vector (Y, D, Z) as

$$Y = g_0(D, Z) + \zeta$$
  $\mathbb{E}[\zeta \mid Z, D] = 0$  outcome variable  $D = m_0(Z) + v$   $\mathbb{E}[v \mid Z] = 0$  treatment assignment

which allows for general heterogeneity in treatment effect. The confounding factors Z affect the treatment variable D via propensity score  $m_0(Z) := \mathbb{E}[D \mid Z]$ , and the outcome variable via function  $g_0(D, Z)$ , both of these functions will be estimated via ML methods.

Then the ATE or ATT are

$$\theta_0 = \mathbb{E} [g_0(1, Z), g_0(0, Z)]$$
 ATE  
 $\theta_0 = \mathbb{E} [g_0(1 - Z) - g_0(0, Z) \mid D = 1]$  ATT

consider a score  $\psi(W; \theta, \eta)$  that satisfies

$$\mathbb{E}\psi\left(W;\theta_{0},\eta_{0}\right)=0 \qquad \qquad \text{identification condition}$$
 
$$\partial_{n}\mathbb{E}\psi\left(W;\theta_{0},\eta\right)\Big|_{n=n_{0}}=0 \qquad \qquad \text{Neyman orthogonality condition}$$

Chernozhukov et al. (2017) suggest employing

• for **ATE** 

$$\begin{split} \psi\left(W;\theta,\eta\right) &= \frac{D\left(Y-g(0,Z)\right)}{m} - \frac{m(Z)(1-D)\left(Y-g(0,Z)\right)}{(1-m(Z))\,m} - \theta\frac{D}{m} \\ \eta(Z) &\coloneqq \left(g(0,Z),g(1,Z),m(Z)\right) \\ \eta_0(Z) &\coloneqq \left(g_0(0,Z),g_0(1,Z),m_0(Z)\right) \end{split}$$

• for **ATT** 

$$\psi(W; \theta, \eta) = \frac{D(Y - g(0, Z))}{m} - \frac{m(Z)(1 - D)(Y - g(0, Z))}{(1 - m(Z))m} - \theta \frac{D}{m}$$
$$\eta(Z) := (g(0, Z), g(1, Z), m(Z), m)$$
$$\eta_0(Z) := (g_0(0, Z), g_0(1, Z), m_0(Z), \mathbb{E}[D])$$

where  $\eta(Z)$  is the nuisance parameter with true value of  $\eta_0(Z)$  consisting of P-square integrable functions, mapping the support of Z to  $\mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \times (\varepsilon, 1 - \varepsilon)$  for ATE and to  $\mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \times (\varepsilon, 1 - \varepsilon) \times (\varepsilon, 1 - \varepsilon)$  for ATT<sup>20</sup>.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>20</sup>All semiparametrically efficient scores satisfy Neyman orthogonality, but not vice versa. In some problems, one may consider inefficient orthogonal scores for robustness.

Chernozhukov et al. (2017) propose to use cross-fitting to avoid overfitting and the Neyman orthogonality to reduce regularization and modeling biases of ML estimators  $\hat{\eta}_0$ , hence, **double debiasing** 

### Algorithm 6.1.9: Estimation with Orthogonal Scores by K-fold Cross-Fitting

- **S1** Let *K* be a fixed integer. Form a *K*-fold random partition of  $\{1, \dots, N\}$  by dividing it into equal parts  $(I_k)_{k=1}^K$ , each of size n := N/K. For each  $I_k$ , let  $I_k^C$  denote all indices that are **not** in  $I_k$
- **S2** Construct *K* estimators  $\check{\theta}_0(I_k, I_k^C)$ ,  $k = 1, \dots, K$  that employ the machine learning estimators

$$\hat{\eta}_0\left(I_k^C\right) = \left(\hat{g}_0\left(0, Z; I_k^C\right), \hat{g}_0\left(1, Z; I_k^C\right), \hat{m}_0\left(Z; I_k^C\right), \frac{1}{N-n} \sum_{i=\in I_k^C} D_i\right)'$$

of the nuisance parameters

$$\eta_0(Z) = (g_0(0, Z), g_0(1, Z), m_0(Z), \mathbb{E}[D])'$$

and where each estimator  $\check{\theta}_0\left(I_k,I_k^C\right)$  is defined as the root  $\theta$  of

$$\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i \in I_k} \psi\left(W; \theta, \hat{\eta}_0\left(I_k^C\right)\right) = 0$$

for the score  $\psi$  for ATE and ATT respectively.

• **S3** Average the *K* estimators to obtain the final estimator

$$\tilde{\theta}_0 = \frac{1}{K} \sum_{k=1}^K \check{\theta}_0 \left( I_k, I_k^C \right)$$

and an approximate standard error for this estimator is  $\hat{\sigma}/\sqrt{N}$ , where  $\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \hat{\psi}_i^2$ ,  $\hat{\psi} := \psi\left(W_i; \tilde{\theta}_0, \hat{\eta}_0\left(I_{k(i)}^C\right)\right)$ ,  $k(i) := \{k \in \{1, \cdots, K\} : i \in I_k\}$  an approximate  $(1 - \alpha) \times 100\%$  Confidence interval is

$$CI_n := \left[ \tilde{\theta}_0 \pm \Phi^{-1} \left( 1 - \frac{\alpha}{2} \right) \frac{\hat{\sigma}}{\sqrt{N}} \right]$$

The **key assumptions** on the rate of estimating are

•  $\forall d \in \{0,1\}, \|\zeta\|_{P,2} \ge c, \|v\|_{P,2} \ge c$ , and

$$\left\|g(d,Z)\right\|_{P,q} \leq C \qquad \left\|Y\right\|_{P,q} \leq C \qquad P\left(\epsilon \leq m_0(Z) \leq 1-\epsilon\right) = 1 \qquad P\left(\mathbb{E}_P\left[\zeta^2 \mid Z\right] \leq C\right) = 1$$

• the ML estimators based on a random subset  $I_k^C$  of  $\{1, \dots, N\}$  of size N - n,  $\forall N \ge 2K$ ,  $d \in \{0, 1\}$ 

$$\begin{split} & \left\| \hat{g}_{0} \left( d, Z; I_{k}^{C} \right) - g_{0}(d, Z) \right\|_{P, 2} \cdot \left\| \hat{m}_{0} \left( Z; I_{k}^{C} \right) - m_{0}(Z) \right\|_{P, 2} \leq \frac{\delta_{n}}{\sqrt{n}} \\ & \left\| \hat{g}_{0} \left( d, Z; I_{k}^{C} \right) - g_{0}(d, Z) \right\|_{P, 2} + \left\| \hat{m}_{0} \left( Z; I_{k}^{C} \right) - m_{0}(Z) \right\|_{P, 2} \leq \delta_{n} \end{split}$$

and  $P\left(\varepsilon \leq \hat{m}_0\left(Z; I_k^C\right) \leq 1 - \varepsilon\right) = 1$  with  $P_P$ -probability no less than  $1 - \Delta_n{}^a$ .

$$\sqrt{s^g/n} \cdot \sqrt{s^m/n} \Leftrightarrow s^g s^m \ll \sqrt{n}$$

which is much weaker than the without-sample-splitting condition  $(s^g)^2 + (s^m)^2 \ll n$ 

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup>The conditions are fairly sharp, in the sense that for a sparse regression function  $g_0$  and a proposensity function  $m_0$  with sparsity indices  $s^g \ll n$ ,  $s^m \ll n$ , and estimators  $\hat{g}_0$  and  $\hat{m}_0$  have sparsity indices of order  $s^g$  and  $s^m$ , converging to  $g_0$  and  $m_0$  at the rates  $\sqrt{s^g/n}$  and  $\sqrt{s^m/n}$ . The rate conditions in the assumption require

6-28 Week 6: DID and TWFE

the estimator from Algorithm 6.1.9 achieves asymptotic normality:  $\sigma^{-1}\sqrt{N}\left(\tilde{\theta}_0-\theta_0\right)\to\mathcal{N}\left(0,1\right)$ , where  $\sigma^2=\mathbb{E}_P\left[\psi^2\left(W;\theta_0,\eta_0\left(Z\right)\right)\right]$ , the results hold with  $\hat{\sigma}^2$ . The confidence regions based upon  $\tilde{\theta}_0$  have uniform asymptotic validity

$$\sup_{P\in\mathcal{P}}|P\left(\theta_{0}\in CI_{n}\right)-(1-\alpha)|\rightarrow0$$

.

**Uncertainty due to sample-splitting**: although sample partitions have no impact on estimation results asymptotically, but may be important in finite samples. Chernozhukov et al. (2017) proposes to repeat the procedure S times and repartition each time, get a set of estimates  $\tilde{\theta}_0^s$ . Then, consider 2 quantities:

- sample **average** of the *S* estimates:  $\tilde{\theta}_0^{\text{mean}}$
- sample **median** of the *S* estimates:  $\tilde{\theta}_0^{\text{median}}$

 $\tilde{\theta}_0^{\mathrm{median}}$  is less affected by extreme estimates, hence more robust. But asymptotically, the specific random partition is irrelevant, hence  $\tilde{\theta}_0^{\mathrm{mean}}$  and  $\tilde{\theta}_0^{\mathrm{median}}$  should be close. Chernozhukov et al. (2017) also introduce the repsective standard error measures:

$$\hat{\sigma}^{\text{mean}} = \sqrt{\frac{1}{S} \sum_{s=1}^{S} \left( \hat{\sigma}_{s}^{2} + \underbrace{\left( \tilde{\theta}_{0}^{s} - \frac{1}{S} \sum_{j=1}^{S} \tilde{\theta}_{0}^{j} \right)^{2}}_{\text{variation of sample splitting}} \right)} \quad \hat{\sigma}^{\text{median}} = \text{median} \left\{ \sqrt{\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2} + \underbrace{\left( \hat{\theta}_{i} - \hat{\theta}^{\text{median}} \right)^{2}}_{\text{variation of sample splitting}}} \right\}_{i=1}^{S}$$

**In practice**, one might want to consider the following

- for **extreme propensity score**, set cutoffs close to 0 and 1
- for **nuisance function estimation**, some typical methods are tree-based methods (Random Forest, Regression Tree, Boosting), or  $l_1$ —penalization method (Lasso), or neural network. One can also use the weighted averages of these methods s.t. the average gives the lowest mean squared out-of-sample prediction errors.

Athey et al. (2018) proposed a similar framework, focusing on high dimensional linear models. They showed that in linear models, it is enough to correct for linear biases in two steps:

- S1 Fit a regularized linear model for the outcome given the features separately in the 2 treatment groups
- **S2** reweight the first-stage residuals by using weights that approximately balance all the features between the treatment and control groups

Athey et al. (2018) showed that it is often possible to achieve approximate balance under reasonable assumptions and that approximate balance suffices for eliminating bias due to regularization, combined with a lasso regression adjustment.

Consider the conditional ATE for the treated sample

$$\tau = \frac{1}{n_t} \sum_{i:D_i=1} \mathbb{E} [Y_i(0) - Y_i(1) \mid X_i]$$

In addition to unconfoundedness, they also assume linearity:

$$\mu_c(x) = \mathbb{E}\left[Y_i(0) \mid X = x\right] = x\beta_c \qquad \qquad \mu_t(x) = \mathbb{E}\left[Y_i(1) \mid X = x\right] = x\beta_t$$

for all  $x \in \mathbb{R}^p$ . This assumption is strong, but generally used in high-dimension cases. Given linearity, we have

$$\tau = \mu_t - \mu_c \qquad \qquad \mu_t = \overline{X}_t \beta_t \qquad \qquad \mu_c = \overline{X}_t \beta_c \qquad \qquad \overline{X}_t = \frac{1}{n_t} \sum_{i=1}^n \mathbf{1} \{D_i = 1\} X_i$$

the main focus of this paper is to estimate  $\mu_c$  when p is large, combining two approaches:

- weighted estimation: weighting control to mimic treatment
- **regression** adjustment: estimate  $\beta_c$  using control observations and get  $\hat{\mu}_c = \overline{X}_t \hat{\beta}_c$

both of them perform poorly in high-dimension setting alone. Athey et al. (2018) propose a meta-algorithm that estimate

$$\hat{\mu}_{c} = \overline{X}_{t} \hat{\beta}_{c} + \sum_{i:W:=0} \gamma_{i} \left( Y_{i}^{obs} - X_{i} \hat{\beta}_{c} \right)$$

where  $\overline{X}_t \hat{\beta}_c$  captures the strong signals, and  $\gamma_i$  rebalance the residuals and effectively extract left-over signals. It satisfies

$$\left| \hat{\mu}_{c} - \mu_{c} \right| \leq \underbrace{\left\| \overline{X}_{t} - X_{c}^{T} \gamma \right\|_{\infty} \left\| \hat{\beta}_{c} - \beta_{c} \right\|_{1}}_{\text{dimensionality bias}} + \underbrace{\left| \Sigma_{i:W_{i}=0} \gamma_{i} \epsilon_{i} \right|}_{\text{variance}}$$

the dimensionality bias should be expected to scale as

$$\left\| \overline{X}_t - X_c^T \gamma \right\|_{\infty} = O\left( \sqrt{\log(p)/n} \right) \qquad \left\| \hat{\beta}_c - \beta_c \right\|_1 = O\left( k \cdot \sqrt{\log(p)/n} \right)$$

then in a sufficiently sparse setting, i.e., k is sufficiently small, the bias could be **variance dominated**. The estimation procedure is

S1 compute the **positive** approximately balancing weights  $\gamma$  to make the mean of the reweighted control sample  $X_c^T \gamma$  match the treated sample mean  $\overline{X}_t$  as closely as possible,

$$\gamma = \arg\min_{\tilde{\gamma}} \left\{ (1 - \zeta) \left\| \tilde{\gamma} \right\|_{2}^{2} + \zeta \left\| \overline{X}_{t} - X_{c}^{T} \tilde{\gamma} \right\|_{\infty}^{2} \text{ s.t. } \sum_{i:W_{i}=0} \tilde{\gamma}_{i} = 1, 0 \leq \tilde{\gamma}_{i} \leq n_{c}^{-2/3} \right\}$$

 $\gamma$  is constrained to be positive to prevent aggresive extrapolating.

S2 fit  $\beta_c$  in the linear model by using a lasso or an elastic net to achieve sufficiently good risk bounds under  $L_1$ -risk

$$\hat{\beta}_{c} = \arg\min_{\beta} \left[ \sum_{i:W_{i}=0} \left( Y_{i}^{obs} - X_{i}\beta \right)^{2} + \lambda \left\{ (1-\alpha) \left\| \beta \right\|_{2}^{2} + \alpha \left\| \beta \right\|_{1} \right\} \right]$$

S3 estimate the ATE as

$$\hat{\tau} = \overline{Y}_t - \left\{ \overline{X}_t \hat{\beta}_c + \sum_{i:W_i = 0} \gamma_i \left( Y_i^{obs} - X_i \hat{\beta}_c \right) \right\}$$

an analogous estimator for the ATE  $\mathbb{E}[Y(1) - Y(0)]$  can also be constructed as

$$\hat{\tau}_{ATE} = \overline{X} \left( \hat{\beta}_t - \hat{\beta}_c \right) + \sum_{i:W_i = 1} \gamma_{t,i} \left( Y_i^{obs} - X_i \hat{\beta}_t \right) - \sum_{i:W_i = 0} \gamma_{c,i} \left( Y_i^{obs} - X_i \hat{\beta}_c \right)$$

6-30 Week 6: DID and TWFE

where

$$\gamma_t = \arg\min_{\tilde{\gamma}} \left\{ (1 - \zeta) \left\| \tilde{\gamma} \right\|_2^2 + \zeta \left\| \overline{X} - X_t^T \tilde{\gamma} \right\|_{\infty}^2 \text{ s.t. } \sum_{i:W_i = 0} \tilde{\gamma}_i = 1, 0 \le \tilde{\gamma}_i \le n_c^{-2/3} \right\}$$

and  $\gamma_c$  is constructed similarly.

There are 3 key features of this algorithm:

- (a) direct covariance adjustment based on the outcome data with regularization to deal with the **high dimensionality**
- (b) weighting using the relationship between the treatment and the features
- (c) the weights are based on **direct measures of imbalance** rather than on propensity score estimates

In comparison with doubly robust estimators,

- doubly robust estimators estimate the outcome model and the propensity score, this method instead relies on linearity assumption twice
- doubly robust estimators are preferable given sufficient sparsity and well-specified propensity models
- this method is not estimating propensity score, but just balancing, hence substantially easier

**Unconfoundedness versus DiD/TWFE** The unconfoundedness assumption and TWFE model validate different non-nested comparisons:

- **TWFE** model assumes: the treated differs from the control in unobserved characteristics that are potentially **correlated** with a persistent component of the outcomes (the fixed effects  $\alpha_i$ )
- Unconfoundedness assumes: the selection is based solely on past rather than future outcomes

The literature in general does not provide a lot of guidance on the choice between the two strategies<sup>21</sup>. In two cases, unconfoundedness and TWFE lead to similar results:

- the averages of previous period outcomes are similar for the control and the treatment group
- the avearge in the control group does not change much over time

when the control group changes over time, and the control group and treatment group differ in the initial period, then TWFE and unconfoundedness give different results. The differences can be bounded under additional assumptions. Consider the case of 2 periods, where everyone in the first period with treatment equal to 0, and a positive true treatment effect  $\beta$ .

• If treatment is correlated with an unobserved individual fixed effects  $a_i$ , and outcomes are

$$Y_{it} = a_i + \beta D_{it} + \epsilon_{it}$$
  $Y_{it-1} = a_i + \epsilon_{it-1}$ 

where  $\epsilon_{it}$  is serially uncorrelated, and uncorrelated with  $a_i$  and  $D_{it}$ . If one controls for  $Y_{it-1}$  but ignore fixed effects, that is, estimate  $Y_{it}$  on the residual from a regression of  $D_{it}$  on  $Y_{it-1}$ , the resulting estimator is  $\frac{\text{Cov}(Y_{it}, D_{it} - \gamma Y_{it-1})}{\text{Var}(D_{it} - \gamma Y_{it-1})}$ . Substituting  $a_i \equiv Y_{it-1} - \epsilon_{it-1}$ , get the real

$$Y_{it} = Y_{it-1} + \beta D_{it} + \epsilon_{it} - \epsilon_{it-1}$$

then the estimator controlling unconfoundedness only is

$$\frac{\operatorname{Cov}(Y_{it}, D_{it} - \gamma Y_{it-1})}{\operatorname{Var}(D_{it} - \gamma Y_{it-1})} = \beta - \frac{\operatorname{Cov}(\epsilon_{it-1}, D_{it} - \gamma Y_{it-1})}{\operatorname{Var}(D_{it} - \gamma Y_{it-1})} = \beta + \gamma \cdot \frac{\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}}{\operatorname{Var}(D_{it} - \gamma Y_{it-1})}$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>21</sup>Xu (2023) touches on this topic by comparing strict exogeneity (TWFE) and sequential ignorability (unconfoundedness).

if  $Y_{it-1}$  is larger in the control group, meaning that  $\gamma < 0$ , just assumming unconfoundedness and adjusting for the lagged outcome will overestimate the true effects.

• If the correct specification is instead

$$Y_{it} = \alpha + \theta Y_{it-1} + \beta D_{it} + \epsilon_{it}$$

where  $\epsilon_{it}$  is serially uncorrelated. Just run a TWFE (in this case, first-difference) model, get an estimator  $\frac{\text{Cov}(Y_{it}-Y_{it-1},D_{it})}{\text{Var}(D_{it})}$ , plug in  $Y_{it}-Y_{it-1}=\alpha+(\theta-1)Y_{it-1}+\beta D_{it}+\epsilon_{it}$ , get

$$\frac{\operatorname{Cov}(Y_{it} - Y_{it-1}, D_{it})}{\operatorname{Var}(D_{it})} = \beta + (\theta - 1) \cdot \frac{\operatorname{Cov}(Y_{it-1}, D_{it})}{\operatorname{Var}(D_{it})}$$

in general  $\theta \in (0,1)$  for stationary, if  $Y_{it-1}$  is larger in control group, TWFE will overestimate the true effects.

In the more general setting, to estimate  $\mu_0 = \mathbb{E}[Y_{i,t+1}(0) \mid G_i = 1]$ , we are comparing

$$\begin{split} \tilde{\mu}_{0,TWFE} &= \mathbb{E}\left(Y_{it} \mid G_i = 1\right) + \mathbb{E}\left(Y_{i,t+1} \mid G_i = 0\right) - \mathbb{E}\left(Y_i t \mid G_i = 0\right) \\ \tilde{\mu}_{0,uncf} &= \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbb{E}\left(Y_{t+1} \mid G = 0, Y_t\right) \mid G = 1\right] = \int \mathbb{E}\left(Y_{t+1} \mid G = 0, Y_t = y\right) F_{Y_t}\left(\mathrm{d}y \mid G = 1\right) \end{split} \quad \text{unconfoundedness}$$

the difference between the two is then

$$\tilde{\mu}_{0,uncf} - \tilde{\mu}_{0,TWFE} = \int \Delta(y) F_{Y_t} \left( \mathrm{d}y \mid = 1 \right) - \int \Delta(y) F_{Y_t} \left( \mathrm{d}y \mid G = 0 \right)$$

where  $\Delta(y) = \mathbb{E}(Y_{t+1} \mid G = 0, Y_t = y) - y = \mathbb{E}(Y_{t+1} - Y_t \mid G = 0, Y_t = y)$  equals the expectation of change in the outcome conditioning on the lagged outcome in the **control** group. Ding and Li (2019) establishes that the relative magnitude of  $\tilde{\mu}_{0,uncf}$  and  $\tilde{\mu}_{0,TWFE}$  depends

- (a)  $\mathbb{E}(Y_{t+1} Y_t)$  conditional on  $Y_t$  in the **control** group: the dependence of the outcome on the lagged outcome
- (b) difference between the distribution of  $Y_t$  in the **treated** versus **control** group: the dependence of the treatment assignment on the lagged outcome

Assuming stationarity,

$$\frac{\partial \mathbb{E}\left(Y_{t+1} \mid G=0, Y_t=y\right)}{\partial y} < 1, \forall y$$

we have

- if  $Y_t \perp G$ , or equivalently,  $F_{Y_t}$   $(y \mid G = 1) = F_{Y_t}$   $(y \mid G = 0)$
- if  $F_{Y_t}(y \mid G = 1) \ge F_{Y_t}(y \mid G = 0), \forall y, \tilde{\mu}_{0,TWFE} \le \tilde{\mu}_{0,uncf}$ , thus  $\tilde{\tau}_{TWFE} \ge \tilde{\tau}_{uncf}$
- if  $F_{Y_t}(y \mid G = 1) \le F_{Y_t}(y \mid G = 0), \forall y, \tilde{\mu}_{0,TWFE} \ge \tilde{\mu}_{0,uncf}$ , thus  $\tilde{\tau}_{TWFE} \le \tilde{\tau}_{uncf}$

and both estimation could be biased for the true  $\tau_{ATT}^{22}$ .

For the semiparametric inverse probability weighting estimator proposed by Abadie (2005),

$$\tilde{\mu}_{0,TWFE}' = \mathbb{E}\left[GY_t + \frac{e(1-G)\left(Y_{t+1} - Y_t\right)}{1-e}\right] / \Pr\left(G = 1\right)$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>22</sup>Stationary can be tested by estimating the derivative of the conditional mean function  $\mathbb{E}(Y_{t+1} \mid G = 0, Y_t = y)$ ;  $F_{Y_t}(y \mid G = 1)$  and  $F_{Y_t}(y \mid G = 0)$  can be visually compared via the empirical CDF of the outcomes in the treatment and control groups.

6-32 Week 6: DID and TWFE

and the semiparametric estimator under unconfoundedness

$$\tilde{\mu}'_{0,uncf} = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{e(Y_t)}{1 - e(Y_t)}(1 - G)Y_{t+1}\right] / \Pr(G = 1)$$

the comparison results still hold.

Imai et al. (2023) propose a TWFE/DID mixed method by conditioning on lagged outcomes other than the most recent one, which is differenced out by TWFE. For each treated observation,

- 1 find a set of control observations that have the idential treatment history up to the prespecified number of periods
- 2 refine the *matched set* by adjusting for observed confounding via standard matching and weighting techniques s.t. the treated and matched control observations have similar covariate values
- 3 apply a DiD estimator to account for an underlying time trend

Imai et al. (2023) defined 2 parameters

- the number of *leads*,  $F \ge 0$ : how many periods **after** the treatment being administered, selected by researchers
- the number of *lags*, *L* ≥ 0: how many periods **before** the treatment being administered, selected based on identification assumption. This allows for some carryover effects up to *L* periods.

assuming no spillover effect, the ATT is defined as

$$\delta(F, L) = \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,t+F} \left(D_{it} = 1, D_{i,t-1} = 0, \left\{D_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=2}^{L}\right) - Y_{i,t+F} \left(D_{it} = 0, D_{i,t-1} = 0, \left\{D_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=2}^{L}\right) \mid D_{it} = 1, D_{i,t-1} = 0\right]$$

here, the treatment status can go back to the control condition before the outcome is measures, that is  $D_{i,t+l}$  for some  $l \in [1, F]$ . Researchers choose the value of L and F based on:

- L: large L improves the credibility of the carryover effect assumption, but reduce the number of matches
- F: larger F reveals long-term casual effects, but hard to interpret if many units switch the treatment status during the F leading periods

unconfoundedness in this setting is defined as

$$\left[ Y_{i,t+F} \left( D_{it} = 1, D_{i,t-1} = 0, \left\{ D_{i,t-l} \right\}_{l=2}^{L} \right), Y_{i,t+F} \left( D_{it} = 0, D_{i,t-1} = 0, \left\{ D_{i,t-l} \right\}_{l=2}^{L} \right) \right] \perp D_{it}$$

$$\left| D_{i,t-1} = 0, \left\{ D_{i,t-l} \right\}_{l=2}^{L}, \left\{ Y_{i,t-l} \right\}_{l=1}^{L}, \left\{ \mathbf{X}_{i,t-l} \right\}_{l=0}^{L} \right]$$

where  $X_{it}$  is a vector of observed time-varying confounders for unit i at period t. But if there exist **unobserved** confounders, or further histories before t - L confound the casual relationship between  $X_{it}$  and  $Y_{i,t+F}$ , this assumption will be violated. Therefore, Imai et al. (2023) propose to adopt the TWFE (DiD) design, and assumme **parallel trend** assumption after conditioning on the treatment, outcome, covariate histories:

$$\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,t+F}\left(D_{it}=0,D_{i,t-1}=0,\left\{D_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=2}^{L}\right)-Y_{i,t-1}\mid D_{it}=1,D_{i,t-1}=0,\left\{D_{i,t-l},Y_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=2}^{L},\left\{\mathbf{X}_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=0}^{L}\right]\right]$$

$$=\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,t+F}\left(D_{it}=0,D_{i,t-1}=0,\left\{D_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=2}^{L}\right)-Y_{i,t-1}\mid D_{it}=0,D_{i,t-1}=0,\left\{D_{i,t-l},Y_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=2}^{L},\left\{\mathbf{X}_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=0}^{L}\right]\right]$$

the conditioning set includes the **treatment history**, **covariate history**, and **lagged outcomes**, except the **immediate lag**  $Y_{i,t-1}$ . The parallel trend assumption cannot account for unobserved timing-varying confounders, so one must examine the pretrends of the treated and matched control units.

Imai et al. (2023) construct the matched control sets as:

$$\mathcal{M}_{it} = \{i' : i' \neq i, D_{i't} = 0, D_{i't'} = D_{it'}, \forall t' = t - 1, \dots, t - L\}$$

for the treated observations with  $D_{i,t} = 1$  and  $D_{i,t-1} = 0$ . Unlike staggered adoption, units are allowed to switch treatment status multiple times over time.

There are several methods to adjust for other confounders for the parallel pre-trend assumption,

• **matching**: suppose  $|\mathcal{M}_{it}| \leq J$ , that is, each treated observation is matched with at most J control units from the mathced set with replacement. Then one can compute

$$S_{it}\left(i'\right) = \frac{1}{L} \sum_{l=1}^{L} \sqrt{\left(\mathbf{V}_{i,t-l} - \mathbf{V}_{i',t-l}\right)' \mathbf{\Sigma}_{i,t-l}^{-1} \left(\mathbf{V}_{i,t-l} - \mathbf{V}_{i',t-l}\right)}$$

for a matched control unit  $i' \in \mathcal{M}_{it}$  where  $\mathbf{V}_{it'}$  represents the time-varying covariates one wishes to adjust for and  $\Sigma_{it'}$  is the sample covariance matrix of  $\mathbf{V}_{it'}$ . That is, given a matched control unit, compute the standardized distance using the time-varying covariates and average it across time periods.

One can also use the estimated propensity scores to compute the distance measure. One can

- S1 create a subset of the data consisting all treated observations and their matched observations from the same period
- S2 fit a treatment assignment model and estimate the propensity scores

$$\hat{e}_{it}\left(\left\{\left(D_{i,t-l},\mathbf{V}_{i,t-l}'\right)_{i,t-l}'\right\}_{l=1}^{L}\right)$$

then adjust for the lagged covariates by matching on the estimated propensity score,

$$S_{it}\left(i'\right) = \left|\operatorname{logit}\left\{\hat{e}_{it}\left(\left\{\left(D_{i,t-l}, \mathbf{V}'_{i,t-l}\right)'_{i,t-l}\right\}_{l=1}^{L}\right)\right\} - \operatorname{logit}\left\{\hat{e}_{it}\left(\left\{\left(D_{i',t-l}, \mathbf{V}'_{i',t-l}\right)'_{i',t-l}\right\}_{l=1}^{L}\right)\right\}\right|$$

After computing the distance measure  $S_{it}(i')$  for all control units, we can refine  $\mathcal{M}_{it}$  by selecting the J most similar control units:

$$\mathcal{M}_{it}^* = \left\{ i' : i' \in \mathcal{M}_{it}, S_{it}(i') < C, S_{it}(i') \le S_{it}^{(J)} \right\}$$

where  $S_{it}^{J}$  is the Jth-order statistic of  $S_{it}(i')$  among control units in the original  $\mathcal{M}_{it}$ .

• weighting: construct a weight for each control unit i' within a matched set of a given treated observation (i,t) where a greater weight is assigned to a more similar unit. One can use the inverse propensity score weighting method of Hirano et al. (2003), where

$$w_{it}^{i'} \propto \frac{\hat{e}_{it} \left( \left\{ \left( D_{i,t-l}, \mathbf{V}'_{i,t-l} \right)'_{i,t-l} \right\}_{l=1}^{L} \right)}{1 - \hat{e}_{it} \left( \left\{ \left( D_{i,t-l}, \mathbf{V}'_{i,t-l} \right)'_{i,t-l} \right\}_{l=1}^{L} \right)} \qquad \text{s.t. } \sum_{i' \in \mathcal{M}_{it}} w_{it}^{i'} = 1 \text{ and } w_{it}^{i':i' \notin \mathcal{M}_{it}} = 0$$

this model should be fitted to the entire sample of treated and control observations.

6-34 Week 6: DID and TWFE

After constructing the refined matched sets, then we can compute the DiD estimate as

$$\hat{\delta}\left(F,L\right) = \frac{1}{\sum_{i=1}^{N}\sum_{t=L+1}^{T-F}D_{it}}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\sum_{t=L+1}^{T-F}D_{it}\left\{\left(Y_{i,t+F} - Y_{i,t-1}\right) - \sum_{i' \in \mathcal{M}_{it}}w_{it}^{i'}\left(Y_{i',t+F} - Y_{i',t-1}\right)\right\}$$

where the counterfactual outcome is

$$Y_{i,t+F}(X_{i,t}=0,X_{i,t-1}=0,X_{i,t-2},\cdots,X_{i,t-L})$$

and  $D_{it} = X_{it} (1 - X_{i,t-1}) \cdot \mathbf{1} \{ |\mathcal{M}_{it}| > 0 \}$ ,  $D_{it} = 1$  only if observation (i,t) changes the treatment status from the control condition at t-1 to treatment at t, with at least 1 matched control unit,  $w_{it}^{i'}$  is nonnegative normalized weight.

If F > 0, that is, we are interested in carryover effects, the matched control units may include those units that receive the treatment after t but before the outcome is measured at t + F, some treated units may return to control before t + F. One may want to specify the future treatment sequence s.t. the causal quantity is defined w.r.t. the counterfactual scenario of interests.

One must check the balance of **the lagged outcome variables** and **time-varying covariates** over multiple pretreatment periods. For each treated observation (i, t) with  $D_{it} = 1$ , define the balance for variable j at the period t - l as

$$B_{it}\left(j,l\right) = \frac{V_{i,t-l} - \sum_{i' \in \mathcal{M}_{it}} w_{it}^{i'} V_{i',t-l,j}}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{N_1-1} \sum_{i'=1}^{N} \sum_{t'=L+1}^{T-F} D_{i't'} \left(V_{i',t'-l,j} - \overline{V}_{t'-l,j}\right)^2}}$$

where  $N_{\equiv \frac{1}{N_1-1}} \sum_{i'=1}^{N} \sum_{t'=L+1}^{T-F} D_{i't'}$  is the total number of treated observations, and  $\overline{V}_{t-l,j} = \sum_{i,t-l,j}^{N} / N$ . Then aggregate it across all treated observations for each covariate and pretreatment time period, get

$$\overline{B}(j,l) = \frac{1}{N_1} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=L+1}^{T-F} D_{it} B_{it}(j,l)$$

Assuming at least one treat and control unit,  $0 < \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} X_{it} < NT$ , and at least one unit with  $D_{it} = 1$ ,  $0 < \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} D_{it}$ , Imai et al. (2023)'s DiD estimate  $\hat{\delta}(F, L)$  is equivalent to a **weighted** TWFE estimate:

## Theorem 6.1.10: Imai et al. (2023)'s DiD estimate and weighted TWFE equivalance

 $\hat{\delta}(F, L)$  is equivalent to

$$\hat{\beta}_{TWFE} = \arg\min_{\beta} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it} \left\{ \left( Y_{it} - \overline{Y}_{i}^{*} - \overline{Y}_{t}^{*} + \overline{Y}^{*} - \beta \left( X_{it} - \overline{X}_{i}^{*} - \overline{X}_{t}^{*} + \overline{X}^{*} \right) \right) \right\}$$

where  $\overline{\square}^*$  is the weighted average of  $\square$  by W, where the weight is

$$W_{it} = \sum_{i'=1}^{N} \sum_{t'=1}^{T} D_{i't'} \cdot v_{it}^{i't'}, \qquad v_{it}^{i't'} = \begin{cases} 1, & (i,t) = (i',t'+F) \\ 1, & (i,t) = (i',t'-1) \\ w_{i't'}^{i}, & i \in \mathcal{M}_{i't'}, t = t'+F \\ -w_{i't'}^{i}, & i \in \mathcal{M}_{i't'}, t = t'-1 \\ 0, & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

in many cases,  $W_{it}$  can take a negative value, implying the TWFE estimator relies heavily on its parametric assumption.

To computate the standard errors of  $\hat{\delta}(F, L)$ , we use an observation-specific weight

$$W_{it} = \sum_{i'=1}^{N} \sum_{t'=1}^{T} D_{i't'} \cdot v_{it}^{i't'}, \qquad v_{it}^{i't'} = \begin{cases} 1, & (i,t) = (i',t'+F) \\ -1, & (i,t) = (i',t'-1) \\ -w_{i't'}^{i}, & i \in \mathcal{M}_{i't'}, t = t'+F \\ w_{i't'}^{i}, & i \in \mathcal{M}_{i't'}, t = t'-1 \\ 0, & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

and calculate the conditional standard errors as

$$\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\delta}(F,L) \mid \mathbf{D}\right) = \frac{N^* \cdot \mathbb{V}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it}^* Y_{it}\right)}{\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} D_{it}\right)^2}$$

where  $N^*$  is the total number of units with at least one nonzero weight; and the **unconditional standard errors** as

$$\mathbb{V}\left(\hat{\delta}(F,L)\right) = \frac{1}{\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} D_{it}\right]^{2}} \cdot \left\{ N \cdot \mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} D_{it}\right] - 2 \frac{\mathbb{E}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it}^{*} Y_{it}\right)}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} D_{it}} \cdot N \cdot \operatorname{Cov}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it}^{*} Y_{it}, \sum_{t=1}^{T} D_{it}\right) + \frac{\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it}^{*} Y_{it}\right]}{\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} D_{it}\right]^{2}} \cdot N \cdot \mathbb{V}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} D_{it}\right) \right\}$$

one can also apply the block boostrap procedure for within-unit time dependence.

#### 6.1.5.7 Distributional effects

Heterogeneity in treatment effects does not creat problems for the DiD estimator, but the distributional effects might be of interest.

**Bonhomme and Sauder (2011)** consider the 2 period case, where in period 1 (pre-treatment), the realized outcome is denoted as  $Y_{i1}$ ; in period 2 (post-treatment), the observed outcome  $Y_{i2} = D_i Y_{i2}^1 + (1 - D_i) Y_{i2}^0$  where  $Y_{i2}^0$  is the potential outcome if not treated,  $Y_{i2}^1$  is the potential outcome if treated.

The outcomes are model as

$$Y_{i2}^{0} = f_{2}^{0}(X_{i}) + \beta_{2}^{0}\eta_{i} + \nu_{i2}^{0}$$
 
$$Y_{i1} = f_{1}(X_{i}) + \beta_{1}\eta_{i} + \nu_{i1}$$

where outcomes depend on observed covariates  $X_i$  and initial endowment  $\eta_i$ . For a special case of this model with no covariates and equal returns to the endowment

$$Y_{i2}^{0} = \alpha_{2}^{0} + \eta_{i} + \nu_{i2}^{0}$$
 
$$Y_{i1} = \alpha_{1} + \eta_{i} + \nu_{i1}$$

Bonhomme and Sauder (2011) made the following assumptions to identify the **distribution** of  $Y_{i2}^0$  given  $D_i = 1$ :

A1 **consistent DiD**:  $v_{i1}$  and  $v_{i2}^0$  are independent of  $D_i$ 

6-36 Week 6: DID and TWFE

A2 **fixed effects**:  $v_{i1}$  and  $v_{i2}^0$  are independent of  $\eta_i$  given  $D_i$ 

A3 **characteristic function**: the characteristic function of  $Y_{i1}$  given  $D_i = 0$  is nonvanishing on  $\mathbb{R}$ , where the function is  $\Psi_W(t) = \mathbb{E}\left[\exp(itW)\right]^{23}$ .

Under A1-A3, the characteristic function of  $Y_{i2}^0$  given  $D_i = 1$  is identified as

$$\Psi_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1}(t) = \frac{\Psi_{Y_{i1}|D_i=1}(t)}{\Psi_{Y_{i1}|D_i=0}(t)} \Psi_{Y_{i2}|D_i=0}(t)$$

in log form

$$\log \Psi_{Y_{i:1}^0|D_i=1}(t) = \log \Psi_{Y_{i:2}|D_i=0}(t) + \Psi_{Y_{i:1}|D_i=1}(t) - \Psi_{Y_{i:1}|D_i=0}(t)$$

which is a generalization of the DiD logic: the distribution of realized outcomes for the treated is corrected for the fact that treated and controls do not have the same distribution of unobservables  $\eta_i$ . Then, from the identified characteristic function, recover the distribution of the potential outcomes by taking the inverse Fourier transformation

$$f_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1}(y) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int \exp\left(-ity\right) \left[ \frac{\Psi_{Y_{i1}|D_i=1}(t)}{\Psi_{Y_{i1}|D_i=0}(t)} \Psi_{Y_{i2}|D_i=0}(t) \right] dt$$

then the quantile treatment effects can be identified as

$$\Delta(\tau) \equiv F_{Y_{i2}|D_i=1}^{-1}(\tau) - F_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1}^{-1}(\tau), \ \tau \in [0,1]$$

Notice that the distribution of  $(v_{i1}, v_{i2}^0)$  is not restricted, at the cost of imposing additivity on the outcome variables.

In the general case, where covariates enter as  $f_2^0(X_i)$  and  $f_1(X_i)$ , and the initial endowment to effect different periods differently with  $\beta_1, \beta_2 \neq 1$ , Bonhomme and Sauder (2011) make two extra assumptions

A4 **overlapping**:  $p_D > 0$  and  $p_D(X_i) < 1$  with probability 1, where the propensity scores are  $p_D = P(D_i = 1)$ ,  $P_D(x) = P(D_i = 1 \mid X_i = x)$  This assumption do not restrict the correlations between  $\eta_i$ ,  $v_{i1}$ ,  $v_{i2}^0$  and  $X_i$ . Then we get

$$\Psi_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1,X_i}(t\mid x) = \frac{\Psi_{Y_{i1}|D_i=1,X_i}(t\mid x)}{\Psi_{Y_{i1}|D_i=0,X_i}(t\mid x)} \Psi_{Y_{i2}|D_i=0,X_i}(t\mid x) \quad \Psi_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1}(t) = \frac{1}{p_D} \mathbb{E}\left[\omega(t\mid X_i)(1-D_i)\exp(itY_{i2})\right]$$

where

$$\omega(t\mid X_i) \equiv \frac{p_D(X_i)}{1-p_D(X_i)} \cdot \frac{\Psi_{Y_{i1}\mid D_i=1,X_i}(t\mid X_i)}{\Psi_{Y_{i1}\mid D_i=0,X_i}(t\mid X_i)} = \frac{\mathbb{E}\left[D_i \exp(itY_{i1})\mid X_i\right]}{\mathbb{E}\left[(1-D_i) \exp(itY_{i1})\mid X_i\right]}$$

A5 **instrument**:  $\exists \tilde{Y}_{i0}$  s.t.  $v_{i1}$  and  $v_{i2}^0$  are uncorrelated with  $\tilde{Y}_{i0}$  given  $D_i = 0$ ,  $Y_{i1}$  and  $\tilde{Y}_{i0}$  are correlated given  $D_i = 0$ .  $\tilde{Y}_{i0}$  is essentially like the linear panel data instruments, not orthogonal to fixed effects. For example, consider

$$Y_{i2}^{0} = \alpha_{2}^{0} + \beta_{2}^{0} \eta_{i} + v_{i2}^{0}$$
 
$$Y_{i1} = \alpha_{1} + \beta_{1} \eta_{i} + v_{i1}$$

where  $Y_{i1}$  is endogenous:

$$Y_{i2}^0 = \alpha_2^0 - \rho \alpha_1 + \rho Y_{i1} + v_{i2}^0 - \rho v_{i1}$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>23</sup>This is a common assumption in the nonparametrically deconvolution literature. Many usual parametric distribution (normal, gamma) satisfiy this condiditon.

with the instrument  $\tilde{Y}_{i0}$ , we can identify  $\rho$  as

$$\rho = \frac{\text{Cov}(\tilde{Y}_{i0}, Y_{i2} \mid D_i = 0)}{\text{Cov}(\tilde{Y}_{i0}, Y_{i1} \mid D_i = 0)}$$

which gives the identification of the entire distribution

$$f_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1}(y) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int \exp\left(-ity\right) \left[ \frac{\Psi_{Y_{i1}|D_i=1}(\rho t)}{\Psi_{Y_{i1}|D_i=0}(\rho t)} \Psi_{Y_{i2}|D_i=0}(t) \right] dt$$

This identification strategy yields the estimation for a random sample  $(Y_{i2}, Y_{i1}, D_i)$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, N$ :

• No covariates,  $\eta_i$ 's effects are **the same** in both periods,

$$\hat{f}_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1}(y) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-T_N}^{T_N} \exp\left(-ity\right) \times \left[ \frac{\hat{\Psi}_{Y_{i1}|D_i=1}(t)}{\hat{\Psi}_{Y_{i1}|D_i=0}(t)} \hat{\Psi}_{Y_{i2}|D_i=0}(t) \right] dt$$

• No covariates,  $\eta_i$ 's effects are **different** in both periods,

$$\hat{f}_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1}(y) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-T_N}^{T_N} \exp\left(-ity\right) \times \left[ \frac{\hat{\Psi}_{Y_{i1}|D_i=1}(\hat{\rho}t)}{\hat{\Psi}_{Y_{i1}|D_i=0}(\hat{\rho}t)} \hat{\Psi}_{Y_{i2}|D_i=0}(t) \right] dt$$

where  $\rho$  is estimated in an IV regression of  $Y_{i2}$  on  $Y_{i1}$  on the control sample, using  $\tilde{Y}_{i0}$  as an instrument

• With covariates,  $\eta_i$ 's effects are **different** in both periods,

$$\hat{f}_{Y_{i2}^0|D_i=1}(y) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-T_N}^{T_N} \exp(ity) \frac{1}{\hat{p}_D} \times \left( \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \hat{\omega} \left( \hat{\rho}t \mid X_i \right) (1 - D_i) \exp(itY_{i2}) \right) dt$$

where  $\hat{p}_D$  is the logit-estimated propensity score,  $\hat{\rho}$  is estimated via a 2SLS of  $Y_{i2}$  on  $Y_{i1}$  on the control sample, using  $\tilde{Y}_{i0}$  and  $X_i$  as instruments.

where  $\hat{\Psi}_W$  denotes the empirical characteristic function of  $W^{24}$ , the trimming parameter  $T_N$  should go to infinity with the sample size N. Pointwise CIs can be computated using the nonparametric bootstrap.

Callaway et al. (2018); Callaway and Li (2019) introduce a Copula Stability Assumption where the missing dependence is constant over time and can be recovered with panel data.

For a panel data where at least 3 periods, t, t – 1, t – 2, of data of all individuals in the sample are available, treatment takes place at t. Define the  $\tau$ -quantile of a random variable W as

$$\omega_{\tau} = F_W^{-1}(\tau) := \inf \{ \omega : F_W(\omega) \ge \tau \}$$

denote the distributions of potential outcomes of treated and control units  $Y_{1t}$ ,  $Y_{0t}$  as  $F_{Y_{1t}|D=1}$ ,  $F_{Y_{0t}|D=1}$ , and define the **Quantile Treatment Effect on the Treated** (QTT) as

$$QTT(\tau) = F_{Y_{1t}|D=1}^{-1}(\tau) - F_{Y_{0t}|D=1}^{-1}(\tau)$$

the identification relies on the assumptions

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>24</sup>For example,  $\hat{\Psi}_{Y_{i2}|D_i=0}(t) = \frac{1}{N_0} \sum_{i,D_i=0} \exp(itY_{i2})$ .

6-38 Week 6: DID and TWFE

A1 **Mean DiD**: denote difference in untreated potential outcomes as  $\Delta Y_{0t} = Y_{0t} - Y_{0t-1}$ , then

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\Delta Y_{0t} \mid D=1\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\Delta Y_{0t} \mid D=0\right]$$

This is just the parallel trend assumption commonly used.

A2 **Distribution DiD**: the distribution of the change in untreated potential outcomes does not depend on whether or not the individual belongs to the treated or the untreated group

$$\Delta Y_{0t} \perp D$$

which is a gneralization of the parallel trend assumption.

A3 **Copula stability**: denote a copula function as  $C_{\Delta Y_{0t-1}|D=1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ , then

$$C_{\Delta Y_{0t},Y_{0t-1}|D=1}\left(\cdot,\cdot\right)=C_{\Delta Y_{0t-1},Y_{0t-2}|D=1}\left(\cdot,\cdot\right)$$

which assumes the stability of the dependence between the **change in untreated potential outcomes for the treated**, and the **initial level of untreated potential outcomes for the treated**<sup>25</sup>. Let  $F_{\Delta Y_{0t}, Y_{0t-1}|D=1}$  be the joint distribution of  $\Delta Y_{0t}$  and  $Y_{0t-1}$  for the treatment group, then by Sklar's theorem,

$$F_{\Delta Y_{0t},Y_{0t-1}|D=1}\left(\delta,y'\right)=C_{\Delta Y_{0t},Y_{0t-1}|D=1}\left(F_{\Delta Y_{0t}|D=1}(\delta),F_{Y_{0t-1}|D=1}(y')\right)$$

under this assumption, the marginal distributions can change in unrestricted ways.

There are two additional assumptions for identification:

- uniqueness of copula:  $\Delta Y_t$  for the untreated and  $\Delta Y_{t-1}$ ,  $Y_{t-1}$ ,  $Y_{t-2}$  for the treated are continuously distributed with densities that are uniformly bounded from above and away from 0.
- panel data, treatment only happens at t: The observed data  $\{Y_{it}, Y_{it-1}, Y_{it-2}, X_i, D_i\}_{i=1}^n$  are i.i.d. draws from the joint distribution  $F_{Y_t, Y_{t-1}, Y_{t-2}, X, D}$  and  $Y_{it} = D_i Y_{1it} + (1 D_i) Y_{0it}$ ,  $Y_{it-1} = Y_{0it-1}$  and  $Y_{it-2} = Y_{0it-2}$

then Callaway and Li (2019)'s identification result is given as

$$F_{Y_{0t}|D=1}(y) = \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{1}\left\{F_{\Delta Y_{t}|D=0}^{-1}\left(D_{\Delta Y_{t-1}|D=1}\left(\Delta Y_{t-1}\right)\right) \leq y - F_{Y_{t-1}|D=1}^{-1}\left(D_{Y_{t-2}|D=1}(Y_{t-2})\right)\right\} \mid D=1\right]$$

and

$$\mathrm{QTT}(\tau) = F_{Y_t|D=1}^{-1}(\tau) - F_{Y_{0t}|D=1}^{-1}(\tau)$$

Consider the case of TWFE models  $Y_{0it} = \theta_t + \eta_i + \nu_{it}$ , where time fixed effects  $\theta_t$  are common for the treated and untreated groups, individual effects  $\eta_i$  may be distributed differently across the treated and untreated. For the identification of ATT, it requires  $\mathbb{E}\left[\Delta\nu_t \mid D=1\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\Delta\nu_t \mid D=0\right]$ , and to identify QTT, it is additionally required that

$$\Delta v_t \perp D$$
 (distribution DiD)  $C_{\Delta v_t, \eta + v_{t-1}|D=1} = C_{\Delta v_{t-1}, \eta + v_{t-2}|D=1}$  (copula stability)

One can check sufficient condition of  $(v_t, v_{t-1} | \eta, D = 1)$  and  $(v_{t-1}, v_{t-2} | \eta, D = 1)$  following the same distribution. A stronger assumption also satisfies the copula stability is  $v_{it}$  being i.i.d<sup>26</sup>.

With covariates, there are two main scenarios that the methods can be extended to

• distributional DiD holds conditional on covariates, copula stability holds unconditionally

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>25</sup>This assumption is about how to identify  $F_{\Delta Y_{0t},Y_{t-1}|D=1}$ , i.e., the joint distribution ( $\Delta Y_{0t},Y_{0t-1}\mid D=1$ ), from which the distribution of interest  $F_{Y_{0t}|D=1}$  can be derived. Notice that we can identify  $F_{\Delta Y_{0t}|D=1}$  via the distributional DiD assumption, and  $F_{Y_{0t-1}|D=1}$  directly from the data, but the joint distribution can only be identified with additional information on the copula.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>26</sup>Copula Stability here allows for the distribution of  $v_{it}$  to change over time, to be serially correlated, to be correlated with the individual heterogeneity.

### • distribution DiD and copula stability hold conditional on covariates

The conditional distributional DiD assumption is

$$\Delta Y_{0t} \perp D \mid X$$

and assume overlapping

$$p := P(D = 1) > 0, \ p(x) := P(D = 1 \mid X = x) < 1, \forall x \in X$$

then under conditional distributional DiD and unconditional copula stability, and overlapping

$$F_{Y_{0t}|D=1}(y) = \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{1}\left\{F_{\Delta Y_{0t}|D=1}^{p,-1}\left(F_{\Delta Y_{t-1}|D=1}(\Delta Y_{t-1})\right) \leq y - F_{Y_{t-1}|D=1}^{-1}\left(F_{Y_{t-2}|D=1}(Y_{t-2})\right)\right\} \mid D=1\right]$$

where

$$F^p_{\Delta Y_{0t}|D=1}(\delta) = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1-D}{p}\frac{p(X)}{1-p(X)}\mathbf{1}\left\{\Delta Y_t \leq \delta\right\}\right]$$

and the QTT

$$QTT(\tau) = F_{Y_{1t}|D=1}^{-1}(\tau) - F_{Y_{0t}|D=1}^{-1}(\tau)$$

is identified.

The difference from the unconditional results is:  $F_{\Delta Y_{0t}|D=1}$  is not identified by the distribution of untreated potential outcomes for the untreated, but the weighted distribution  $F^p_{\Delta Y_{0t}|D=1}(\delta)$ 

For the case of conditional copula stability, assume

$$C_{\Delta Y_{0t}, Y_{0t-1} \mid X, D=1}(\cdot, \cdot \mid x) = C_{\Delta Y_{0t-1}, Y_{0t-2} \mid X, D=1}(\cdot, \cdot \mid x)$$

then

$$\begin{split} P\left(Y_{0t} \leq y \mid X = x, D = 1\right) = & \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{1}\left\{F_{\Delta Y_{0t}\mid X, D = 0}^{-1}\left(F_{\Delta Y_{0t-1}\mid X, D = 1}\left(\Delta Y_{0t-1}\mid x\right)\right)\right. \\ & \leq y - F_{Y_{0t-1}\mid X, D = 1}^{-1}\left(F_{Y_{0t-2}\mid X, D = 1}(Y_{0t-2}\mid x)\right)\right\}\mid X = x, D = 1\right] \end{split}$$

and

$$QTT(\tau; x) = F_{Y_{1t} \mid X, D=1}^{-1}(\tau \mid x) - F_{Y_{0t} \mid X, D=1}^{-1}(\tau \mid x)$$

also

$$P(Y_{0t} \le y \mid D = 1) = \int_X P(Y_{0t} \le y \mid X = x, D = 1) dF_{X|D=1}(x)$$

and

$$\mathrm{QTT}(\tau) = F_{Y_{1t}|D=1}^{-1}(\tau) - F_{Y_{0t}|D=1}^{-1}(\tau)$$

are all identified.

# 6.1.6 Staggered Adoption

In the block-assignment setting, the constant treatment effect assumption (6.1.5) is not important. Therefore, allowing unrestricted heterogeneity in the treatment effects  $Y_{it}(1) - Y_{it}(0)$ , the TWFE/DiD estimator continues to estimate a well-defined ATE for the treated in the periods of treatment

$$\frac{1}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it}} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it} \left( Y_{it}(1) - Y_{it}(0) \right)$$

6-40 Week 6: DID and TWFE

but this robustness does **not** extend outside of block assignment settings. Recent literature allows for general heterogeneity in the treatment effects in the staggered adoption setting

$$\mathbf{W}^{\text{stag}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \cdots & 1 & 1 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots & \vdots \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 & \cdots & 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

Let  $A_i \equiv T + 1 - \sum_{t=1}^T W_{it}$  be the adoption date (the first time unit i is treated), with  $A_i \equiv \infty$  for never adopters, and  $N_a$  is the number of units with adoption date  $A_i = a$ . Define the ATE by time and adoption date as

$$\tau_{t|a} \equiv \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{it}(1) - Y_{it}(0) \mid A_i = a\right]$$

which can vary both time and adoption date.

### 6.1.6.1 Decompositions of the TWFE estimator

Consider the TWFE estimate  $\hat{\tau}$  based on the least squares regression

$$\min_{\alpha,\beta,\tau} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} (Y_{it} - \alpha_i - \beta_t - \tau W_{it})^2$$

define for all time-periods t and all adoption dates a the average outcome in period t for units with adoption date a as

$$\overline{Y}_{t|a} \equiv \frac{1}{N_a} \sum_{i:A_i=a} Y_{i,t}$$

then for all pairs of time periods t, t' and pairs of adoption dates a, a' such that  $t' < a \le t$  and either  $a' \le t'$  or t < a', define the building block for the TWFE estimator

$$\hat{\tau}_{t,t'}^{a,a'} \equiv \left(\overline{Y}_{t|a} - \overline{Y}_{t'|a}\right) - \left(\overline{Y}_{t|a'} - \overline{Y}_{t'|a'}\right)$$

• For group a ( $t' < a \le t$ ),  $\overline{Y}_{t,a} - \overline{Y}_{t',a}$  reflects a change in treatment but the treatment effect is contaminated by the time trend in control

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\overline{Y}_{t|a} - \overline{Y}_{t'|a'}\right] = \beta_t - \beta_{t'} + \tau_{t|a}$$

- For group *a*′, there are 2 cases:
  - t' < t < a': group a' never get treated, then  $\hat{\tau}^{a,a'}_{t,t'}$  is the standard DiD
  - -a' < t' < t: group a' always get treated, then in the presence of treatment effect heterogeneity, the expected difference in average outcomes under the treatment is  $\mathbb{E}\left[\overline{Y}_{t|a'} \overline{Y}_{t'|a'}\right] = \beta_t \beta_{t'} + (\tau_{t|a'} \tau_{t'|a'})$ , which leads to

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\tau}_{t,t'}^{a,a'}\right] = \tau_{t|a} - \left(\tau_{t|a'} - \tau_{t'|a'}\right)$$

it is a weighted average of treatment effects, with weights adding up to 1 and some negative weights under heterogeneous treatment effects.

## Issues of TWFEs in this scenario, TWFE has two issues

1 without further assumptions, the estimator cannot be interpreted as an estimate of an average treatment effect with nonnegative weights in general

2 the combination of weights on the  $\hat{\tau}_{t,t'}^{a,a'}$  chosen by TWFE depends on data (the distribution of units across the adoption groups).

#### 6.1.6.2 Alternative DiD Estimators

Callaway and Sant'Anna (2021) propose 2 ways of dealing with the negative weights:

- never-adopters as control:  $\hat{\tau}_{t,a-1}^{a,\infty} = \left(\overline{Y}_{t,a} \overline{Y}_{a-1,a}\right) \left(\overline{Y}_{t,\infty}, \overline{Y}_{a-1,\infty}\right)$ . It is not ideal since the never-adopters are likely to be fundamentally different, and there may be too few of them in long panels
- later-adopters as control:  $\hat{\tau}_{t,a-1}^{a,>t} = \left(\overline{Y}_{t,a} \overline{Y}_{a-1,a}\right) \frac{1}{T-t} \sum_{a'=t+1}^{T} \left(\overline{Y}_{t,a'} \overline{Y}_{a-1,a'}\right)$

Callaway and Sant'Anna (2021) assume

### Assumption 6.1.11: Callaway and Sant'Anna (2021)'s assumptions

- 1 **Irreversibility of Treatment**:  $D_1 = 0$  a.s.; for  $t = 2, \dots, T, D_{t-1} = 1 \Rightarrow D_t = 1$  a.s.
- 2 **Random Sampling**:  $\{Y_{i,1}, \dots, Y_{i,\mathcal{T}}, X_i, D_{i,1}, \dots, D_{i,\mathcal{T}}\}_{i=1}^n$  is i.i.d.. This implies the availability of panel data
- 3 Limited Treatment Anticipation:  $\exists \delta \geq 0 \text{ s.t.}$

$$\mathbb{E}[Y_{t,a} \mid X] = \mathbb{E}[Y_{0,a} \mid X]$$
 a.s.  $\forall t < a - \delta$ 

where  $\delta$  captures the anticipation horizon.

4 Conditional Parallel Trends, *Never-Treated*:  $\forall a, t \in \{2, \dots, T\}$  s.t.  $t \ge a - \delta$ ,

$$\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{t,a} - Y_{t-1,a} \mid X\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{t,\infty} - Y_{t-1,\infty} \mid X\right] \text{ a.s.}$$

5 **Conditional Parallel Trends**, *Later-Treated*:  $\forall a, (s, t) \in \{2, \dots, T\} \times \{2, \dots, T\}$  s.t.  $t \ge a - \delta$  and  $t + \delta \le s < \overline{a}$ ,

$$\mathbb{E}[Y_{t,a} - Y_{t-1,a} \mid X] = \mathbb{E}[Y_{t,s} - Y_{t-1,s} \mid X]$$
 a.s.

There is a tradeoff between Assumption 4 and 5:

- A4 is preferable when there is a sizable group of units of never-treated, and similar enough to the treated units
- without treatment anticipation ( $\delta = 0$ ), A5 restricts observed pre-treatment trends across groups. This could be an issue for A5 when the early pre-treatment periods are different form late-treatment periods
- As  $\delta$  increase (more anticipation), the contitional parallel trend assumptions become stronger
- 6 **Overlapping**: a positive fraction of population starts treatment in period a, and  $\forall a$ , t, propensity score is bounded aways from 1.

Under A1-6 of Assumption 6.1.11, 3 different estimands, outcome regression, inverse probability weighting, doubly robust, can all recover the group-time ATT. There are several remarks:

• the time period  $t = a - \delta - 1$  is used as an appropriate reference time: the most recent time period when untreated potential outcomes are observed in group a

6-42 Week 6: DID and TWFE

• never-treated units can be used as a fixed comparision group for all treated units, but under A5, the ATT for the last treated group can not be estimated since there is no control group for it.

• when A3 and A4 hold **unconditionally** and there is no-anticipation, then one can subset the data to **only** contain observations at t and a - 1, from group a and never-treated units, then run on the subset

$$Y = \alpha_1^{a,t} + \alpha_2^{a,t} \cdot \mathbf{1}(a) + \alpha_3^{a,t} \cdot \mathbf{1}(T) + \beta^{a,t} \cdot \mathbf{1}(a) \times \mathbf{1}(T) + \epsilon^{a,t}$$

where  $\beta^{a,t} = ATT(a,t)$ 

- when there are covariates, control them in the model yields  $\tilde{\beta}^{a,t}$ , which is generally not equal to ATT(a,t), unless the treatment effects are homogeneous in covariates, and there are not covariate-specific trends
- DR estimators are more robust than IPW and OR estimands (larger standard errors)
- usually ATT(a, t) can only be identified until  $t = \mathcal{T} \delta$  due to participation of treatments, but ATT(a, t) can be identified up to  $t = \mathcal{T}$  if some units are known to never participate in the treatment.

Next, Callaway and Sant'Anna (2021) propose an aggregation scheme of the form

$$\theta = \sum_{a} \sum_{t=2}^{T} \omega(a, t) \cdot ATT(a, t)$$

where  $\omega(a,t)$  are weighting functions and focus on three questions

- a event-study style: how the treatment effect varies with length of exposure to the treatment
  - composition-changing aggregation

$$\theta_{es}(e) = \sum_{a} \mathbf{1} \left\{ a + e \le \mathcal{T} \right\} P\left( a \mid a + e \le \mathcal{T} \right) \cdot ATT(a, a + e)$$

which is the average effect of participating in the treatment e periods after the treatment across all groups observed to have participated in the treatment for e periods.  $\theta_{es}(e)$  across different e can not be interpreted as the actual dynamic effects unless ATT(a, a + e) is homogeneous across groups for all e, which is too strong of an assumption

- composition-constant aggregation

$$\theta_{es}^{bal}(e;e') = \sum_{a} \mathbf{1} \left\{ a + e' \le \mathcal{T} \right\} P\left( a \mid a + e' \le \mathcal{T} \right) \cdot ATT(a,a+e)$$

which limits the aggregation to the groups participate in the treatment for at least e' periods. This aggregation use fewer groups for estimate, hence the inference is **noisier**.

b how earlier-treated groups are different from the later-treated groups: consider

$$\theta_{sel}\left(\tilde{a}\right) = \frac{1}{\mathcal{T} - \tilde{a} + 1} \sum_{t=\tilde{a}}^{\mathcal{T}} ATT\left(\tilde{a}, t\right)$$

this averages the treatment effect for group  $\tilde{a}$  across all post-treatment periods

c the calendar-time ATE and cumulative ATE across all groups: for treatmented groups in period t that have treated by t,

$$\theta_{c}\left(\tilde{t}\right) = \sum_{a} \mathbf{1}\left\{\tilde{t} \geq a\right\} P\left(a \mid a \leq \tilde{t}\right) ATT\left(a, t\right)$$

and cumulatively, the ATE among units that have been treated by  $\tilde{t}$  is

$$\theta_c^{cum}\left(\tilde{t}\right) = \sum_{t=2}^t \theta_c(t)$$

And one can aggregate group-time ATE into an overall effect of treatment:

• navie aggregation, weighted by group size

$$\theta_{W}^{O} = \frac{\sum_{a} \sum_{t=2}^{\mathcal{T}} \mathbf{1} \left\{ t \geq a \right\} ATT(a, t) P(a \mid a \leq \mathcal{T})}{\sum_{a} \sum_{t=2}^{\mathcal{T}} \mathbf{1} \left\{ t \geq a \right\} P(a \mid a \leq \mathcal{T})}$$

which guarantees non-negative weights unlike TWFE. But mechanically, more weights are put on groups that participate in the treatment for longer.

• across time within group, then across group aggregation

$$\theta_{sel}^{O} = \sum_{a} \theta_{sel}(a) P(a \mid a \leq \mathcal{T})$$

which is recommended by Callaway and Sant'Anna (2021), resembling the interpretation of the canonical DiD.

• across group, then across time aggregation

$$\theta_{es}^{O} = \frac{1}{\mathcal{T} - 1} \sum_{e=0}^{\mathcal{T} - 2} \theta_{e} s(e) \qquad \qquad \theta_{c}^{O} = \frac{1}{\mathcal{T} - 1} \sum_{t=2}^{\mathcal{T}} \theta_{c}(t) \qquad \qquad \theta_{es}^{O,bal}(e') = \frac{1}{e' + 1} \sum_{e=0}^{e'} \theta_{es}^{bal}(e, e')$$

and in general, these aggregations give different results, unless ATT(a, t) is homogeneous across all a and t.

**Sun and Abraham (2021)** Sun and Abraham (2021) propose to compare the change for a group that adopted in period t,  $\overline{Y}_{t,a} - \overline{Y}_{a-1,a}$ , relative to the change for the never-adopters over the same period

$$\hat{\tau}_{t,a-1}^{a,\infty} = \left(\overline{Y}_{t,a} - \overline{Y}_{a-1,a}\right) - \left(\overline{Y}_{t,\infty}, \overline{Y}_{a-1,\infty}\right)$$

and a simple unweighted average over the periods t after the first period

$$\hat{\tau} = \sum_{t=2}^{T} \sum_{a=2}^{t} \hat{\tau}_{t,a-1}^{a,\infty} \cdot \frac{\Pr(A_i = a \mid 2 \le A_i \le t) \cdot \mathbf{1}_{2 \le a \le t \le T}}{T-1}$$

## Assumption 6.1.12: Sun and Abraham (2021)'s assumptions

- A1 parallel trend
- A2 no anticipation
- A3 homogeneous treatment effect path across a

The main issue discussed by Sun and Abraham (2021) is the contamination that treatment effects from other periods affect the estimate for agiven  $\beta_a$ . For units l periods aways from treatment adoption a at period t, define  $D_t^l := \mathbf{1}(t - a = l)$ , then the relative period bin indicator is

$$\mathbf{1}(t - a \in L) = \sum_{l \in L} \mathbf{1}(t - a = l) = \sum_{l \in L} D_t^l$$

6-44 Week 6: DID and TWFE

and 3 specifications can be represented as:

$$Y_{i,t} = \alpha_i + \lambda_t + \mu_l \sum_{l \ge 0} D_{i,t}^l + \nu_{i,t}$$
 static 
$$Y_{i,t} = \alpha_i + \lambda_t + \sum_{l = -\underline{l}}^{-2} \mu_l D_{i,t}^l + \sum_{l = 0}^{\overline{l}} \mu_l D_{i,t}^l + \nu_{i,t}$$
 full dynamic 
$$Y_{i,t} = \alpha_i + \lambda_t + \beta \cdot \sum_{l < -l} D_{i,t}^l + \sum_{l = -l}^{-2} \mu_l D_{i,t}^l + \sum_{l = 0}^{\overline{l}} \mu_l D_{i,t}^l + \gamma \cdot \sum_{l \ge \overline{l}} D_{i,t}^l + \nu_{i,t}$$
 binned dynamic

then the population regression coefficient on relative period bin L is a linear combination of differences in trends from its own relative period  $l \in L$ , from relative periods  $l \in L'$  in other bins, and from relative periods excluded from the specification  $l \in L^{excl}$ 

$$\begin{split} \mu_L &= \sum_{l \in L} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^L \left( \mathbb{E}\left[ Y_{i,a+l} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty} \mid a \right] - \mathbb{E}\left[ Y_{i,a+l}^{\infty} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty} \right] \right) \\ &+ \sum_{L' \neq L} \sum_{l \in L'} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^L \left( \mathbb{E}\left[ Y_{i,a+l} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty} \mid a \right] - \mathbb{E}\left[ Y_{i,a+l}^{\infty} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty} \right] \right) \\ &+ \sum_{l \in L} \sum_{e \neq c} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^L \left( \mathbb{E}\left[ Y_{i,a+l} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty} \mid a \right] - \mathbb{E}\left[ Y_{i,a+l}^{\infty} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty} \right] \right) \end{split}$$

and the weights  $\omega_{al}^L$  satisfy:

- for periods of **own bin**  $l \in L$ :  $\sum_{l \in L} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^{L} = 1$
- for periods of **other bins**  $l \in L'$ ,  $L' \neq L$ :  $\sum_{l \in L} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^{L} = 0$
- for excluded periods  $l \in L^{excl}$ :  $\sum_{l \in L^{excl}} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^{L} = -1$
- for never-treats:  $\omega_{\infty,l}^L = 0$

then under A1 (parallel trend) of Assumption 6.1.12,

$$\mu_L = \sum_{l \in L} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^L CATT_{a,l} + \sum_{L' \neq L} \sum_{l \in L'} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^L CATT_{a,l} + \sum_{l \in L^{excl}} \sum_{a} \omega_{a,l}^L CATT_{a,l}$$

since we have

$$\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,a+l} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty} \mid a\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,a+l}^{\infty} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty}\right] = CATT_{a,l} + \underbrace{\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,a+l} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty} \mid a\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,a+l}^{\infty} - Y_{i,0}^{\infty}\right]}_{=0}$$

there are still two issues: (1)  $\mu_L$  is an average of not only  $CATT_{a,l}$  of own bin  $l \in L$ , but also from other periods.

And under A1 (parallel trend) and A2 (no anticipation) of Assumption 6.1.12,

$$\mu_{L} = \sum_{l \in L, l > 0} \sum_{a} \omega_{a, l}^{L} CATT_{a, l} + \sum_{L' \neq L} \sum_{l \in L', l > 0} \sum_{a} \omega_{a, l}^{L} CATT_{a, l} + \sum_{l \in L^{excl}, l > 0} \sum_{a} \omega_{a, l}^{L} CATT_{a, l}$$

where only post-treatment CATTs enter. This challenges the pre-trend testing since all pre-treatment effects are zero  $CATT_{a,l<0} = 0$ .

Under **A1** (parallel trend) and **A3** (treatment effect homogeneity), then  $CATT_{a,l} = ATT_l$  is constant across a for given l, then

$$\mu_L = \sum_{l \in L} \omega_l^L ATT_l + \sum_{L' \neq L} \sum_{l \in L'} \omega_l^L ATT_l + \sum_{l \in L^{excl}} \omega_l^L ATT_l$$

These results show that even under the strong assumption of homogeneity, the contamination of treatments from other periods still exists. To tackle this issue, Sun and Abraham (2021) propose to estimate a weighted average of  $CATT_{a,l}$  with reasonable weights (sum to 1 and non-negative) that are shares of cohorts that experience at least l periods relative to treatment, normalized by the size of L

$$v_L = \frac{1}{|L|} \sum_{l \in L} \sum_{a} CATT_{a,l} \Pr \{ a \mid a \in [-l, T-l] \}$$

the estimation procedure is

1 estimate  $CATT_{a,l}$  with TWFE that interacts relative period indicators with cohort indicators, excluding cohort indicators from some set C

$$Y_{i,t} = \alpha_i + \lambda_t + \sum_{a \notin C} \sum_{l \neq -1} \delta_{a,l} \left( \mathbf{1} \left\{ a \right\} \cdot D_{i,t}^l \right) + \epsilon_{i,t}$$

 $C = {\infty}$  if a never-treated cohort is available.

- 2 estimate weights  $Pr\{a \mid a \in [-l, T-l]\}$  by sample shares of each cohort in the relevant periods  $l \in L$
- 3 form the IW estimator as

$$\hat{v}_{L} = \frac{1}{|L|} \sum_{l \in L} \sum_{a} \hat{\delta}_{a,l} \hat{\Pr} \{ a \mid a \in [-l, T-l] \}$$

One can also estimate  $CATT_{a,l}$  via a DiD approach: assume  $\exists$  pre-period s < a, then DiD estimate of  $CATT_{a,l}$  can be defined as

$$\hat{\delta}_{a,l} = \frac{\mathbb{E}_{N}\left[\left(Y_{i,a+l} - Y_{i,s} \cdot \mathbf{1}\left\{a\right\}\right)\right]}{\mathbb{E}_{N}\left[\mathbf{1}\left\{a\right\}\right]} - \frac{\mathbb{E}_{N}\left[\left(Y_{i,a+l} - Y_{i,s} \cdot \mathbf{1}\left\{C\right\}\right)\right]}{\mathbb{E}_{N}\left[\mathbf{1}\left\{C\right\}\right]}$$

where  $C \subseteq \{c : a + l < c \le T\}$  are non-empty control cohorts. If s = a - 1, then the DiD estimator is equivalent to the Step 1 estimator. Under A1 and A2 of Assumption 6.1.12, the DiD estimator using any pre-period s < a and non-empty control cohorts C is unbiased and consistent, there is a trade-off between A1 and A2:

• if A2 is more likely to hold: choose any s < a and include not-yet-treated units in control cohorts  $C = \{c : c > a + l\}$ , which relaxes the parallel trend assumption to be

$$\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,a+l}^{\infty},Y_{i,0}^{\infty}\mid a\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i,a+l}^{\infty},Y_{i,0}^{\infty}\mid > a+l\right]$$

• if A2 is relaxed, the the parallel trend assumption needs to hold

**De Chaisemartin and d'Haultfoeuille (2020)** focus on one-period ahead double differences, with control groups that adopt later a > t:

$$\hat{\tau}_{t,t-1}^{t,a} = \left(\overline{Y}_{t,t} - \overline{Y}_{t-1,t}\right) - \left(\overline{Y}_{t,a} - \overline{Y}_{t-1,a}\right)$$

and aggregate these by averaging over all groups that adopt later:

$$\hat{\tau}_{+,t} = \frac{1}{T - (a-1)} \sum_{a>t} \hat{\tau}_{t-1,t}^{t,a}$$

6-46 Week 6: DID and TWFE

and then average over time periods, weighted by the fraction of adopters in each period

$$\hat{\tau} = \sum_{t=2}^{T} \hat{\tau}_{+,t} \cdot \Pr\left(A_i = a \mid A_i \ge 2\right)$$

by limiting the comparsons to those that are separated by **a single period**, the standard errors may be larger. The additivity assumption is more likely over such short horizons, but it also increases sensitivity to dynamic effects.

Borusyak et al. (2024) focus on a model richer than TWFE model:

$$Y_{it}(0) = A_{it}^T \lambda_i + X_{it}^T \delta + \epsilon_{it}$$

where  $A_{it}$  and  $X_{it}$  are observed covariates, leading to a factor-type structure<sup>27</sup>. Borusyak et al. (2024) propose estimating  $\lambda_i$  and  $\delta$  by least squares using observations for control units only, and later construct **unit-time** specific imputations for treated units

$$\hat{\tau}_{it} = Y_{it} - A_{it}^T \hat{\lambda}_i + X_{it}^T \hat{\delta}$$

which can then be aggregated into an estimator of interest. Even each unit-time specific treatment effect estimator  $\hat{\tau}_{it}$  might be inconsistent, the aggregated estimator is well-behaved.

### 6.1.6.3 Comparision of Estimators

Out of the four alternatives: Callaway and Sant'Anna (2021)'s  $\hat{\tau}^{CS}$ , Sun and Abraham (2021)'s  $\hat{\tau}^{SA}$ , De Chaisemartin and d'Haultfoeuille (2020)'s  $\hat{\tau}^{CH}$  and Borusyak et al. (2024)'s  $\hat{\tau}^{BJS}$ , which should we use? One should consider the four arguments:

- i how different is the never-adopter group
- ii for long differences, how additive and stable over time are the differences between units
- iii dynamic effect: how one-period differences are different from multiple-period differences

iv efficiency

Arkhangelsky and Imbens (2023) recommended to text the presence of systematic variation in  $\hat{\tau}_{t,s}^{a,a'}$  by adoption date a, by the length of the period between before and after t-s, and the time since adoption t-a, instead of reporting all four.

## 6.1.7 Synthetic Control Methods

#### **6.1.7.1** Setting

Consider data for J+1 units over T periods:  $j=1,2,\cdots,J+1$ , w.l.o.g., assume the first unit (j=1) is the treated unit, and the first  $T_0$  periods are before the intervention. For each unit j, we observe outcome  $Y_{jt}$  and predictor vector  $\mathbf{X}_j$ , define the true treatment effect as

$$\tau_{1t} = Y_{1t}^{I} - Y_{1t}^{N}$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>27</sup>For  $A_{it} \equiv 1$  and  $X_{it} \equiv (\mathbf{1}_{t=1}, \cdots, \mathbf{1}_{t=T})$ 

where  $Y_{1t}^I$  is the observed treated outcome,  $Y_{1t}^N$  is the unobservable counterfactual outcome. A synthetic control can then be presented by a  $J \times 1$  vector of weights  $\mathbf{W} = (\omega_2, \dots, \omega_{J+1})'$ , and the synthetic control estimators are then

$$\hat{Y}_{1t}^{N} = \sum_{i=2}^{J+1} \omega_{j} Y_{jt} \qquad \hat{\tau} = Y_{1t} - \hat{Y}_{1t}^{N}$$

and the weights  $\omega_j$  are nonnegative and summing to 1, excluding extrapolation and generally grant sparsity. One way to choose **W** to resemble the pre-intervention values for the treated unit of predictors of the outcome variable. That is, for nonnegative  $v_1, \dots, v_k$ , to **minimize** 

$$\mathbf{W}^* = \arg\min_{\mathbf{W}} \|\mathbf{X}_1 - \mathbf{X}_0 \mathbf{W}\| = \arg\min_{\omega_j} \sqrt{\sum_{h=1}^k v_h \left( X_{h1} - \omega_2 X_{h2} - \dots - \omega_{J+1} X_{hJ+1} \right)^2}$$
(6.2)

then the estimated treatment effect at  $t = T_0 + 1, \dots, T$  is

$$\hat{\tau}_{1t} = Y_{1t} - \sum_{j=2}^{J+1} \omega_j^* Y_{jt}$$

the positive constants  $v_1, \dots, v_k$  reflect the relative importance of the synthetic control reproducing the values of each of the k predictors for the treated unit  $X_{11}, \dots, X_{k1}$ . This is essentially a double-minimizing procedure:

- for each given set of weights  $V = (v_1, \dots, v_k)$ , there is a  $W^*(V)$  that solves Equation 6.2
- choose the **V**\* among all possible **V**:
  - simple selector:  $v_h$  as the **inverse** of the variance of  $X_{h1}, \dots, X_{hJ+1}$ , which rescales all rows of to have unit variance
  - mean squared prediction error (MSPE) selector:

$$\mathbf{V}^* = \arg\min_{\mathbf{V}} \sum_{t \in \mathcal{T}_0} (Y_{1t} - \omega_2(\mathbf{V}) Y_{2t} - \dots - \omega_{J+1}(\mathbf{V}) Y_{J+1t})^2$$

for some set  $\mathcal{T}_0 \subseteq \{1, 2, \dots, T_0\}$  of the pre-treatment periods.

- out-of-sample validation selector:
  - 1 divide the pre-treatment periods into a *training* period  $\{1, \dots, t_0\}$  and a *validation* periods  $\{t_0 + 1, \dots, T_0\}$
  - 2 for a  $\hat{\mathbf{V}}$ , let  $\tilde{\omega}_2(\hat{\mathbf{V}})$ ,  $\cdots$ ,  $\tilde{\omega}_{J+1}(\hat{\mathbf{V}})$  be the weights computed with training period data, apply the MSPE selector on the validation period data as

$$\mathbf{V}^* = \arg\min_{\mathbf{V}} \sum_{t \in \mathcal{T}_0} \left( Y_{1t} - \tilde{\omega}_2(\mathbf{V}) Y_{2t} - \dots - \tilde{\omega}_{J+1}(\mathbf{V}) Y_{J+1t} \right)^2$$

3 calculate  $\mathbf{W}^* = \mathbf{W}(\mathbf{V}^*)$  for the **last**  $t_0$  **periods** before the intervention  $t = \{T_0 - t_0 + 1, \dots, T_0\}$ 

#### 6.1.7.2 Bias bounds

Consider the linear factor model (a generalization of DiD) for  $Y_{jt}^N$ :

$$Y_{jt}^N = \delta_t + \boldsymbol{\theta}_t \mathbf{Z}_j + \lambda_t \boldsymbol{\mu}_j + \epsilon_{jt}$$

6-48 Week 6: DID and TWFE

where  $\delta_t$  is a time trend;  $\mathbf{Z}_j$  and  $\boldsymbol{\mu}_j$  are vectors of observed and unobserved predictors of  $Y_{jt}^{N_{28}}$ .

When the synthetic control reproduces the characteristics of the treated unit, let  $X_1$  be the vector that includes  $Z_1$  and the pre-intervention outcomes for the treated unit, and let  $X_0$  be the matrix that collects the same variables for the untreated units, and suppose  $X_1 = X_0 X^*$ , then the bias of  $\hat{\tau}_{it}$  is controlled by  $\epsilon_{it}$  and  $T_0$ :

- small  $\epsilon_{it}$  or large  $T_0$ : smaller bias
- large  $\epsilon_{it}$  or small  $T_0$ : larger bias<sup>29</sup>

In practice, one should

- check the fitting: if  $X_1 X_0W^*$  is large, synthetic is substantially biased
- check the  $T_0$ : if the fitting is good, increasing  $T_0$  reduces the bias, but if the fitting is bad, infinite  $T_0$  won't eliminate bias
- check the size of pool: a larger *J* increase the risk of over-fitting since it gets easier to fit pretreatment outcomes<sup>30</sup>
- check linearity: if  $Y_{it}^N$  is determined nonlinearly, even a good fit cannot rule out bias

Abadie et al. (2010) derived the bias bound as

$$C(p)^{1/p} \left(\frac{\overline{\lambda}^2 F}{\underline{\xi}}\right) J^{1/p} \max \left\{ \frac{\overline{m}_p^{1/p}}{T_0^{1-1/p}}, \frac{\overline{\sigma}}{T_0^{1/2}} \right\}$$

which also increases with the number of components in  $\mu_i$  (the number on unobserved factors).

#### 6.1.7.3 Variable selection

How to choose the predictors  $X_1$  and  $X_0$  is a fundamental task for the synthetic control method. Typically,  $X_1$  and  $X_0$  include

- pre-intervention values of outcome variable Y
- other predictors  $\mathbf{Z}_j$ : excluded  $\mathbf{Z}_j$  become part of  $\mu_j$ , which increase the bound of bias

one can use data-driven methods for variable selection by measuring the predictive power of alternative sets of variables on the pre-intervention training and validation periods.

#### 6.1.7.4 Inference

Consider the test statistic that measures the ratio of the post-intervention fit relative to the pre-intervention fit. For  $0 \le t_1 \le t_2 \le T$  and  $j = \{1, \dots, J+1\}$ , let

$$R_{j}(t_{1}, t_{2}) = \sqrt{\frac{1}{t_{2} - t_{1} + 1} \sum_{t=t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \left(Y_{jt} - \hat{Y}_{jt}^{N}\right)^{2}}$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>28</sup>If restricting  $\lambda_t \equiv \lambda$ , it reduces to DiD/TWFE.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>29</sup>The intuition: The synthetic control matches  $\mathbf{Z}_1$ , on the other hand,  $\mu_1$  cannot be matched (unobserved), only when differences in the values of the individual transitory shocks between the treated and the synthetic cnotrols compensate for the differences in unobserved factor loadings  $\mu_i$ .

 $<sup>^{30}</sup>$ In high-dimensional setting  $J \to \infty$  and  $T_0 \to \infty$ , synthetic control estimators may be asymptotically unbiased.

where  $\hat{Y}_{jt}^N$  is the outcome on t produced by a synthetic control when unit j is coded as treated and using all other J units to construct the donor pool<sup>31</sup>. The ratio between the post-intervention RMSPE and pre-intervention RMSPE for unit j is

$$r_j = \frac{R_j(T_0 + 1, T)}{R_j(1, T_0)}$$

 $r_j$  measures the quality of the fit of a synthetic control for unit j in the post-treatment period, relative to the quality of the fit in the pre-treatment period. One then use the permutation distribution of  $r_j$  for inference. the p-value for the inferential procedure based on the permutation distribution of  $r_j$  is given by

$$p = \frac{1}{J+1} \sum_{j=1}^{J+1} I_+ (r_j - r_1)$$

where  $I_+(\cdot)$  is an indicator function that returns one for nonnegative arguments and 0 otherwise<sup>32</sup>. This permutation method is not trying to approximate the sampling distributions of test statistics, instead, the design-based inference focuses on the variation in the test statistic induced by the assignment mechanism.

### 6.1.7.5 Pros and requirements

Relative to regression-based counterfactual, synthetic controls have the following advantage:

- No extrapolation: the synthetic control weights are non-negative and sum to 1.
- **Transparency of the fit**: synthetic controls make transparent the actual  $X_1 X_0 W^*$
- **Safeguard against specification searches**: similar to classic matching methods, synthetic controls do not require access to post-treatment outcomes in the design phase, hence the synthetic control weights can be preregistered
- Transparency of the counterfactuals: the contribution of each comparison unit is clear
- Sparsity: synthetic controls are sparse, making the results easier to interpret

and the synthetic control method requires

- Size and volatility of the outcome: high level of volatility in outcome variables increase the risk of over-fitting, one should apply filtering first to remove the volatility first in both the exposed units and the donor pool<sup>33</sup>.
- **availability of the donor pool**: units that adopt an intervention similar to the unit of interest should not be included in the donor pool; units that have experienced large idiosyncratic shocks should not be included; characteristics **Z** should also be included for matching to avoid interporlation<sup>34</sup>.
- No anticipation: one should backdate to before anticipation, and since synthetic control estimator does
  not restrict the time variation in the effect of the intervention, one don't need to worry about backdating
  mechanically biases the estimator.
- **No interference**: in the design phase, one can drop spillover-affected donor units<sup>35</sup>; in the analysis phrase, one should be aware of the potential direction of the bias due to spillover effects

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>31</sup>This is the root mean squared prediction error (RMSPE) of the synthetic control estimator for unit j and time periods  $t_1, \dots, t_2$ .

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>32</sup>Replace  $Y_{jt} - \hat{Y}_{jt}^N$  in  $R(T_0 + 1, T)$  with their positive or negative parts  $\left(Y_{jt} - \hat{Y}_{jt}^N\right)^+$  or  $\left(Y_{jt} - \hat{Y}_{jt}^N\right)^-$ , leads to one-sided inference, this may increase the power substantially, very important in many cases where samples are considerably small.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>33</sup>The challenge of volatility comes only from the fraction that generated by unit-specific factors.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>34</sup>One should avoid averaging away large discrepancies between the characteristics of the affected unit and the characteristics of the units in the synthetic control.

 $<sup>^{35}</sup>$ There usually is a tradeoff between the no-interference and the availability requirement.

6-50 Week 6: DID and TWFE

• Convex hull condition: sometimes the treated unit might be too extreme in the values of the outcome variable pre-intervention to be approximated by a weighted average of untreated units. One can use L1 difference  $\Delta Y_{jt} = Y_{jt} - Y_{jt-1}$  or growth rates  $\Delta Y_{jt}/Y_{jt-1}$ , or the change relative to pre-treatment means  $\tilde{Y}_{jt} = Y_{jt} - \frac{1}{T_0} \sum_{h=1}^{T_0} Y_{jh}^{36}$ .

Credible applications of synthetic controls also require:

- aggregate data on predictors and outcomes
- **sufficient pre-intervention information**: longer pre-intervention periods reduce bias and overfitting, but structural breaks can happen when the pre-intervention periods are too long
- sufficient post-intervention information

One can apply **backdating** as a diagnostic check to validate synthetic control estimators and use **leave-out** method by dropping one donor unit at a time to construct a range of estimators.

#### 6.1.7.6 Extensions

The recent synthetic control literature has extended the original method greatly:

- Multiple treated units: this is more of a practical than conceptual extension
  - challenge: optimal weight might not be unique, and typically infinite; if to choose one among the
    infinite minimizers, large interpolation bias can arise; the dimensionality curse
  - solution: Abadie and L'hour (2021) propose a synthetic control estimator penalizing pairwise matching discrepancies between the treated units (indexed by  $i = 1, \dots, I$ ) and each of the donor units (indexed by  $j = 1, \dots, J$ ): for each  $i = 1, \dots, I$ , solve

$$\tilde{\mathbf{W}}^* = \arg\min \|\mathbf{X}_i - \mathbf{X}_0 \mathbf{W}\| + \lambda \sum_{j=l+1}^{l+1} \omega_i \|\mathbf{X}_i - \mathbf{X}_j\|^2$$
, s.t.  $\sum_{j=l+1}^{l+1} \omega_j = 1$ ,  $\omega_j \ge 0$ 

where the penalizing parameter  $\lambda > 0$  reduces interpolation biases and gives unique and sparse minimizer,  $\lambda \to \infty$  converges to one-to-one matching,  $\lambda \to 0$  gives an aggregate minimizer. The inference extends the permutation text in Abadie et al. (2010)<sup>37</sup>.

• **Bias correction**: some of the treated units just may not be closely reproduced by a synthetic control, but these ill-fitted units have to be included for interpretation of the estimate. In this case, first regress untreated outcomes  $Y_{I+1,t}, \dots, Y_{I+J,t}$  on the values of the predictors for the untreated units  $X_{I+1}, \dots, Y_{I+J}$  to get  $\hat{\mu}_{0t}$ , then the bias-corrected synthetic control estimator for unit i is

$$\hat{\tau}_{it} = \left(Y_{it} - \sum_{j=l+1}^{l+J} \omega_{ij}^* Y_{jt}\right) - \sum_{j=l+1}^{l+J} \omega_{ij}^* \left(\hat{\mu}_{0t} \left(\mathbf{X}_i\right) - \hat{\mu}_{0t} \left(\mathbf{X}_j\right)\right)$$

alternatively

$$\hat{\tau}_{it} = \left(Y_{it} - \hat{\mu}_{0t}\left(\mathbf{X}_{i}\right)\right) - \sum_{j=I+1}^{I+J} \omega_{ij}^{*} \left(Y_{jt} - \hat{\mu}_{0t}\left(\mathbf{X}_{j}\right)\right)$$

one can also use a pre-trend type test on the pre-treatment sample to estimate any potential bias.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>36</sup>One should be cautious about transforming the outcome variables since: first sometimes credible counterfactuals require reproducing not only the trend but the level; second, it can substantially increase the bias.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>37</sup>In each permutation  $b = 1, \dots, B$ , the identities of the I the treated units are reassigned in the data among the I + J units in the sample, and calculate  $r_{b,1}, \dots, r_{b,I}$  are calculated for the units coded as treated. When I is small relative to I + J, it's possible to consider all reassignments  $\mathbf{C}^I_{I+I}$ , if too computationally consuming, choose B random draws from all subsets of I in the sample.

• Regression-based methods and extrapolation: Doudchenko and Imbens (2016) propose a non-convex combination (negative weights, not summing to 1) with elastic net regularization:

$$\hat{\alpha}, \hat{\mathbf{W}} = \arg \max_{\alpha, \omega_2, \cdots, \omega_{J+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{T_0} \left( Y_{1t} - \alpha - \sum_{j=2}^{J+1} \omega_j Y_{jt} \right)^2 + \lambda_1 \left( \frac{1 - \lambda_2}{2} \sum_{j=2}^{J+1} \omega_j^2 + \lambda_2 \sum_{j=2}^{J+1} |\omega_j| \right)$$

the 2 regularization parameters  $\lambda_1 \ge 0$  and  $0 \le \lambda_2 \le 1$  are selected by cross-validation.  $Y_{jt}$  should be residualized first w.r.t. any other covariates.

 Matrix completion/estimation methods: Amjad et al. (2018) posit a nonlinear factor structure model for the untreated

$$Y_{jt}^N = f\left(\mu_j, \lambda_t\right) + \epsilon_{jt}, \ , j = 2, \cdots, J+1; t = 1, \cdots, T$$

and estimate a low-rank approximation  $\{\hat{M}_{jt}\}$  to the true matrix  $\{M_{jt}\}=\{f(\mu_j,\lambda_t)\}$ , and the  $\hat{M}_{jt}$  are used to de-noise the outcomes  $Y_{jt}^N$  and to impute missing values, and obtain synthetic controls as linear combinations of  $\hat{M}_{jt}$ , with coefficients estimated by ridge regression of  $Y_{1t}$  on  $\hat{M}_{2t}, \cdots, \hat{M}_{J+1t}$  in the pre-intervention periods. Amjad et al. (2019) extended this framework to allow covariates.

• Inference: Chernozhukov et al. (2021) propose a sampling-based inference procedure, assuming a DGP

$$Y_{1t}^N = P_t^N + u_t, \ u_1, \dots, u_T$$
 are stationary, weakly dependent with mean 0

Let  $\tau_{T_0+1}, \cdots, \tau_T$  be the effects of the treatment on the treated unit, then the potential outcome under the intervention is

$$Y_{1t}^{I} = P_{t}^{N} + \tau_{t} + u_{t}, t > T_{0}$$

assume  $u_t$  to be i.i.d., then the post-intervention distribution of  $u_t$  survive any random permutation. Suppose  $P_t^N$  known, under a null hypothesis

$$H_0: \tau_{T_0+1} = a_{T_0+1}, \cdots, \tau_T = a_T$$

then, we can compute  $u_t = Y_{1t} - P_t^N - a_t$  where  $a_t = 0$  for  $1 \le t \le T_0$ , then  $H_0$  can be tested by comparing the distibution  $S\left(u_{T_0+1}, \cdots, u_T\right)$  to its permutation distribution  $S\left(u_{\pi(T_0+1)}, \cdots, u_{\pi(T)}\right)$ , which can be directly computed in the data. For synthetic control method, Chernozhukov et al. (2021) adopt the model

$$P_t^N = \sum_{j=2}^{J+1} \omega_j Y_{jt}$$
, where  $\omega_j \ge 0$ ,  $\sum_{j=2}^{J+1} \omega_j = 1$  and  $\mathbb{E} \left[ u_t Y_{jt} \right] = 0$ ,  $j = 2, \dots, J+1$ 

and apply the text on constrained least squares residuals  $\hat{u}_1, \dots, \hat{u}_T$ . Chernozhukov et al. (2021) do not assume a linear factor model, but restrict  $\mathbb{E}\left[u_tY_{jt}\right]=0$  to estimate  $P_t^N$ ; the synthetic control weights are estimated under  $\tau_{T_0+1}=a_{T_0+1}, \dots, \tau_T=a_T$  using data on  $Y_{it}^N=Y_{it}-a_t$  for all periods, including post intervention periods.

Similarly, Chernozhukov et al. (2019) propose bias-corrected estimation and CIs for the post-treatment ATE,  $(\tau_{T_0+1} + \cdots + \tau_T)/(T - T_0)$  in settings when both  $T_0$  and  $T - T_0$  are large. Chernozhukov et al. (2019) adjust for pre-treatment differences between the treated unit and the synthetic control, and construct CIs based on an asymptotically pivotal t-statistic and centered on the average of K-fold corss-fitted versions of the estimate.

# 6.1.8 Matrix Completion Methods and Factor Models

Assume the outcome in the form

$$Y_{it}(0) = \sum_{r=1}^{R} \alpha_{ir} \beta_{tr} + \epsilon_{it}$$

which greatly generalizes the TWFE specification.

6-52 Week 6: DID and TWFE

### 6.1.8.1 Matrix completion with nuclear norm regularization

Athey et al. (2021) model the entire matrix of potential control outcomes as

$$Y_{it}(0) = L_{it} + \alpha_i + \beta_t + \epsilon_{it}$$

and the matrix **L** with typical element  $L_{it}$  is a low-rank matrix. In practice, it improves the performance of the estimator substantially to keep these fixed effect components in the specification separately from the low-rank component **L**. Athey et al. (2021) propose estimating **L**,  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$  by

$$\mathbf{L}^{*}, \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{*}, \boldsymbol{\beta}^{*} = \arg \min_{L_{it}, \alpha_{i}, \beta_{t}} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} (1 - W_{it}) \left( Y_{it} - L_{it} - \alpha_{i} - \beta_{t} \right)^{2} + \lambda \|\mathbf{L}\|_{*}$$

where the nuclear norm  $\|\mathbf{L}\|_*$  is the sum of the singular values  $\sigma_l(\mathbf{L})$  of the matrix  $\mathbf{L}$ , based on the singular value decomposition

$$\mathbf{L} = \underbrace{\mathbf{S}}_{N \times N} \underbrace{\mathbf{\Sigma}}_{N \times T} \underbrace{\mathbf{R}}_{T \times T}$$

and the penalty parameter  $\lambda$  is chosen through crossvalidation.

#### 6.1.8.2 Grouped Panel Data

Consider a setup where

$$Y_{it}(0) = \theta_{G_{i,t}} + \epsilon_{it}$$

where the group membership and the number of groups G are both unknown. Bonhomme et al. (2022) write the model as a factor model with G factors  $\lambda_{rt}$  and the loadings equal to indicators  $\alpha_{ir} = \mathbf{1}_{G_i=r}$ , such that

$$Y_{it}(0) = \theta_{G_i,t} + \epsilon_{it} = \sum_{r=1}^{G} \alpha_{ir} \lambda_{rt} + \epsilon_{it}$$

#### 6.1.8.3 Synthetic DiD

Once the synthetic control weights are calculated, the SC estimator can be characterized as

$$\min_{\beta,\tau} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \hat{\omega}_i \left( Y_{it} - \beta_t - \tau W_{it} \right)^2$$

the TWFE estimator is based on a slightly different LS regression

$$\min_{\beta,\alpha,\tau} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} (Y_{it} - \alpha_i - \beta_t - \tau W_{it})^2$$

The SC method ignores individual fixed effects  $\alpha_i$ , one way to deal with this is the Synthetic DiD estimator

$$\min_{\beta,\alpha,\tau} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \hat{\omega}_{i} \hat{\lambda}_{t} \left( Y_{it} - \alpha_{i} - \beta_{t} - \tau W_{it} \right)^{2}$$

where an analogous time weights  $\hat{\lambda}_t$  are calculated as

$$\min_{\lambda} \sum_{i=1}^{N-1} \left( Y_{it} - \sum_{s=1}^{T-1} \lambda_s Y_{is} \right)^2$$

s.t.  $\lambda_s \ge 0$  and  $\sum_{s=1}^{T-1} \lambda_s = 1$ .

### 6.1.8.4 Augmented Synthetic Control

Ben-Michael et al. (2021) augment the SC estimator by regressing the outcomes in the treatment period on the lagged outcomes using data for the control units. Using ridge regression for this step:

$$\hat{\eta} = \arg\min_{\eta} \sum_{i=1}^{N-1} \left( Y_{iT} - \eta_0 - \sum_{s=1}^{T-1} \eta_s Y_{is} \right)^2 + \lambda \sum_{s=1}^{T-1} \eta_s^2$$

a standard unconfoundedness approach predicts the potential control outcome for the treated unit/time period pair as

$$\hat{Y}_{NT} = \hat{\eta}_0 + \sum_{s=1}^{T-1} \hat{\eta}_s Y_{Ns}$$

and augmented SC estimator modifies this in a bias-adjustment way:

$$\begin{split} \hat{Y}_{NT} &= \hat{\eta}_0 + \sum_{s=1}^{T-1} \hat{\eta}_s Y_{Ns} + \sum_{i=1}^{T-1} \omega_i \left( Y_{iT} - \hat{\eta}_0 - \sum_{s=1}^{T-1} \hat{\eta}_s Y_{is} \right) \\ &= \sum_{i=1}^{N-1} \omega_i Y_{iT} + \sum_{s=1}^{T-1} \hat{\eta}_s \left( Y_{Ns} - \sum_{j=1}^{N-1} \omega Y_{js} \right) \end{split}$$

# 6.1.9 Unconfoundedness, DiD, SC and Matrix Completion

For the case with a single treated unit-period pair, unit N in period T, the observed countrol outcomes are  $\mathbf{Y}$ , partitioned as

$$\mathbf{Y} = \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{Y}_0 & \mathbf{y}_1 \\ \mathbf{y}_2' & ? \end{pmatrix}$$

where the (N,T) entry is missing. In some cases, linear versions of all four estimators can all be characterized as solutions to the same optimization problem, s.t. different restrictions on parameters of that optimization problem. For a positive integer R, an  $N \times R$  matrix  $\mathbf{U}$ , an  $T \times R$  matrix  $\mathbf{V}$ , an N-vector  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$  and a T-vector  $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ , and a scalar  $\lambda$ , the objective function

$$Q(R, \mathbf{U}, \mathbf{V}, \boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\beta}, \lambda) = \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} (1 - W_{it}) \left( Y_{it} \sum_{r=1}^{R} U_{ir} V_{ir} - \alpha_{i} - \beta_{t} \right)^{2} + \lambda \left( \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{r=1}^{R} U_{ir}^{2} + \sum_{i=1}^{T} \sum_{r=1}^{R} V_{tr}^{2} \right)$$

optimizing this over R,  $\mathbf{U}$ ,  $\mathbf{V}$ ,  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$  given  $\lambda = 0$  does not lead to a unique solution without more structure added:

• **nuclear norm matrix completetion**: choose  $\lambda$  via cross-validation

6-54 Week 6: DID and TWFE

• **unconfoundedness**: the unconfoundedness regression can be characterized as the solution to minize the objective function with restrictions

$$R = T - 1$$
  $\mathbf{U} = \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{Y}_0 \\ \mathbf{y}_2' \end{pmatrix}$   $\alpha = \mathbf{0}$   $\beta_1 = \beta_2 = \dots = \beta_{T-1} = 0$   $\lambda = 0$ 

• **synthetic control**: the SC estimator imposes the restrictions s.t.

$$R = N - 1$$

$$\mathbf{V} = \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{Y}'_0 \\ \mathbf{y}'_1 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$U_{iT} \ge 0, \sum_{i=1}^{N-1} A_{iT} = 1, \forall i$$

$$\alpha = \mathbf{0}$$

$$\lambda = 0$$

• **DiD**: restriction is just R = 0.

#### 6.1.9.1 Selection Mechanism

Outside of a few special cases, to justify the conventional parallel trends assumption, one needs to assume that the treatment is **unrelated to time-varying components** of the outcomes<sup>38</sup>.

Consider a model of

$$Y_{it}(0) = \alpha_i + \beta_t + \epsilon_{it}$$

where  $\epsilon_{it} \perp \alpha_i$  and  $\tau = Y_{it}(1) - Y_{it}(0)$ . If

- $D_i$  is mean-independent from  $(\epsilon_{i1}, \dots, \epsilon_{iT_0+1})$ : both DiD and SC estimators work fine.
- $D_i$  is correlated with  $(\epsilon_{i1}, \dots, \epsilon_{iT_0+1})$ :
  - worse scenario: correlation completely unrestricted, no method can identify the treatment effect
  - natural selection assumption: assuming selection on fixed effects and unconfoundedness

$$D_i \perp Y_{iT_0+1} \mid \alpha_i, Y_{i1}, \cdots, Y_{iT_0}(0)$$

if  $\epsilon_{it}$  are autocorrelated, the DiD estimator is inconsistent, even when  $T_0 \to \infty$ , since  $\epsilon_{iT_0+1} - \frac{1}{T_0} \sum_{t \le T_0} \epsilon_{it}$  remains correlated with  $D_i$ , but the SC estimator would be consistent if  $T_0 \to \infty$ .

#### 6.1.10 Nonlinaer Models

The nonlinear models do not assume linearity in parameters for the conditional means. They are developed for cases where standard TWFE models do no justice to the data, and probit/logit models are not consistent.

#### 6.1.10.1 Changes-in-Changes

For two-period two-group cases, Athey and Imbens (2006) show that the standard TWFE speicifcation

$$Y_i(0) = \mu + \alpha \mathbf{1}_{C_i=1} + \beta \mathbf{1}_{T_i=1} + \epsilon_i$$

**cannot** hold in levels. Instead, they propose a scale-free changes-in-changes (CIC) model for the potential control outcomes

$$Y_i = g(U_i, T_i)$$

 $<sup>^{38}\</sup>mbox{This}$  is most challenging to the DiD estimator.

where  $U_i$  is an unobserved component that has a different distribution in the treated and the controls, but not changing over time. The expected control outcomes can be written in the TWFE form as

$$\mathbb{E}\left[Y_i(0)\mid T_i=t, G_i=g\right] = \beta_0 + \beta_1 t + \alpha \mathbb{E}\left[U_i\mid G_i=g\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[U_i\mid G_i=1\right]$$

Athey and Imbens (2006) show that if  $U_i$  is a scalar, and g(u, t) is strictly monotone in u, one can infer the second-period distribution of the control potential outcome in the treated as

$$F_{Y_i(0)|T_i=2,G_i(2)}(y) = F_{Y_i(0)|T_i=1,G_i=2}\left(F_{Y_i(0)|T_i=1,G_1=1}^{-1}\left(F_{Y_i(0)|T_i=2,G_i=1}(y)\right)\right)$$

which can then be used to estimate the ATE for the treatment group. This expression has an analog in the literature on wage decompositions.

Wooldridge (2023) proposes to assume a known function

$$g: \mathbb{R} \mapsto \mathbb{R}$$
, s.t.  $\mathbb{E}[Y_{it}(0) \mid D_i] = g(\mu + \alpha D + \gamma_t)$ 

such that there is a parallel trend **inside** the known transformation  $g(\cdot)$ , which can be the exponential function  $g(a) = \exp(a)$  in case of non-negative outcomes, or the logistic function  $g(a) = \exp(a)/(1 + \exp(a))$  for binary outcomes.

### 6.1.10.2 Distributional Synthetic Controls

Gunsilius (2023) chooses weights on the control groups s.t. the **marginal distribution** for the weighted controls matches that for the treated group. The metric is based on the quantile function  $F_{\gamma_{gt}}^{-1}(\nu)$  for group g and period t: First, choose weights as

$$\hat{\omega}_{gt} = \arg \min_{\boldsymbol{\omega}: \boldsymbol{\omega} \ge \mathbf{0}, \sum_{g=1}^{G-1} \omega_{gt} = 1} \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^{M} \left( \sum_{g=1}^{G-1} \omega_{gt} \hat{F}_{Y_{gt}}^{-1}(V_m) - \hat{F}_{Y_{gt}}^{-1}(V_m) \right)^2$$

where the quantile functions are evaluated at M randomly choosing values  $v_1, \dots, v_M$ . Then calculate

$$\hat{\omega}_g = \frac{1}{T - 1} \sum_{t=1}^{T - 1} \hat{\omega}_{gt}$$

and estimate the synthetic control quantiles function as

$$\hat{F}_{GT}^{-1}(\nu) = \sum_{g=1}^{G-1} \hat{\omega}_g \hat{F}_{gT}^{-1}(\nu)$$

### 6.1.10.3 Balancing Statistics to Control for Unit Differences

Arkhangelsky and Imbens (2022) focus on settings where the treatment can switch on and off, assume no dynamic effects. Consider a simpler setting based on the specification

$$Y_i = \alpha_{C_i} + \tau W_i + \beta X_i + \epsilon_i$$

where  $C_i$  is the cluster indicator for unit i. Estimating  $\tau$  by least squares is the same as estimating

$$Y_i = \mu + \tau W_i + \gamma \overline{W}_{C_i} + \beta X_i + \delta \overline{X}_{C_i} + \eta_i$$

6-56 Week 6: DID and TWFE

where  $\bar{\cdot}_c$  is the cluster average for cluster c. Assuming unconfoundedness

$$W_i \perp (Y_i(0), Y_i(1)) \mid X_i, \overline{X}_{C_i}, \overline{W}_{C_i}$$

using  $\overline{X}_{C_i}$  and  $\overline{W}_{C_i}$  as proxies for the differences between clusters. A generalized version is

$$W_i \perp (Y_i(0), Y_i(1)) \mid X_i, S_{C_i}$$

where  $S_c$  is the sufficient statistic capturing the relevant features of the cluster. Arkhangelsky and Imbens (2022) extend these ideas from the clustered cross-section to the panel data, consider the least square regression

$$Y_{it} = \tau \ddot{W}_{it} + \epsilon_{it}$$

where  $\ddot{W}_{it}$  is the double difference

$$\ddot{W}_{it} = W_{it} - \overline{W}_{i.} - \overline{W}_{.t} + \overline{\overline{W}}$$

with

$$\overline{W}_{i\cdot} = \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it} \qquad \overline{\overline{W}} = \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} W_{it}$$

same estimator can be obtained via

$$Y_{it} = \tau W_{it} + \gamma \overline{W}_{i\cdot} + \delta \overline{W}_{\cdot t} + \epsilon_{it}$$

Arkhangelsky and Imbens (2022) postulate the existence of a known function  $S_i$  ( $W_{i1}$ ,  $\cdots$ ,  $W_{iT}$ ) that captures all the relevant components of the assignment vector  $\underline{W}_i = (W_{i1}, \cdots, W_{iT})$  (and possibly other covariates). Given this balancing statistic  $S_i$ , assume

$$\underline{W}_i \perp Y_{it}(w) \mid S_i$$

the estimator has a built-in robustness property: if the two-way model is correctly specified or the unconfoundedness given  $S_i$  holds, the esimtator remains **consistent**.

### 6.1.10.4 Negative Controls, Proxies and Deconvolution

One can also choose to use a panel to construct a set of proxy measures for the unobservables. It the proxy measures do not directly affect either outcomes or treatments, then this restriction can be used for identification (Ying et al., 2023).

Similarly, one can assume a proxy variable that is affect by an unobserved confounder but **not** related to the treatment, then one can eliminate the unobservables by subtracting a scaled proxy variable from the outcome of interest, where the scaling can be approximated using the pre-treatment data (Freyaldenhoven et al., 2019).

The key aspect of the negative control literature is to isolate and eliminate the unobserved confounders rather than identify causal effects conditional on unobservables. Alternatively, one can use general deconvolution techniques for identification under different distributional assumptions.

### 6.1.11 Design-based Approaches

Design-based perspective has interesting connections with econometric panel data literature:

• in the FE panel data analysis, source of uncertainty is errors, which can interpreted as realizations of **unobserved** treatments; design-based uncertainty comes from **realizations** of the observed treatment

• in the RE panel data analysis, unit-level heterogeneity is assumed to be uncorrelated with the regressors, this is unlikely to hold in observational studies, but holds by design in experiments

In summary, tranditional anlaysis fixes the **covariates** and focuses on the **distribution** of the **unit-level heterogeneity**; the design-based analysis does the opposite.

### 6.1.11.1 TWFE estimator with random adoption dates

Athey and Imbens (2022) derive the randomization-based distribution of the TWFE estimator under the random assignment assumption alone and present an interpretation for the estimand corresponding to that estimator. They show that as long as the adoption date is randomly assigned, the estimand can be wrriten as a linear combination of average causal effects on the outcome in period t if assigned adoption date a' relative to being assigned adoption date a:

$$\tau_t^{a,a'} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} (Y_{it}(a') - Y_{it}(a))$$

with the weights summing to 1 but generally with negative weights.

### 6.1.11.2 Switchback Designs

Bojinov et al. (2023) consider a *switchback* experiment, with individual units potentially switching between treatment and control groups. Such experiments were originally used in agricultural settings. Using each unit as its own control can substantially improve the precision of estimators compared to assigning each unit to the treatment or control group for the entire period, hence becoming popular in tech company settings.

**Regular switch experiments** Bojinov et al. (2023) focus on a single experimental unit, at each time  $t \in \{1, \dots, T\}$ , assign the unit to receive an intervention  $W_t \in \{0, 1\}$ .

- **assignment path**: the collection of assignments, denoted by a vector  $\mathbf{W}_{1:T} = (W_1, \dots, W_T) \in \{0, 1\}^T$ ,  $\mathbf{w}_{1:T}$  denotes one realization
- **outcome**:  $\forall \mathbf{w}_{1:T}$ ,  $\exists Y_t (\mathbf{w}_{1:T})$ , the set of all potential outcomes are collected in  $\mathbb{Y} = \{Y_t (\mathbf{w}_{1:T})\}_{t \in [T], \mathbf{w}_{1:T} \in \{0,1\}^T}$

let 
$$\{t, t'\} = \{t, t + 1, \dots, t'\}, \forall t < t' \in [T]$$

Assumption 6.1.13: Assumptions of Bojinov et al. (2023)

**A1** Non-anticipating potential outcomes:  $\forall t \in [T], \mathbf{w}_{1:t} \in \{0,11\}^t$ , and  $\forall \mathbf{w}'_{t+1:T}, \mathbf{w}''_{t+1:T} \in \{0,1\}^{T-t}$ ,

$$Y_t\left(\mathbf{w}_{1:t}, \mathbf{w}'_{t+1,T}\right) = Y_t\left(\mathbf{w}_{1:t}, \mathbf{w}''_{t+1,T}\right)$$

**A2** m--Carryover Effects:  $\exists m \text{ s.t. } \mathbf{w}_{t-m:T} \in \{0,1\}^{T-t+m+1}, \ \forall \mathbf{w}'_{1:t-m-1}, \mathbf{w}''_{1:t-m-1} \in \{0,1\}^{t-m-1}, \ t \in \{m+1, m+2, \cdots, T\},$ 

$$Y_t\left(\mathbf{w}'_{1:t-m-1},\mathbf{w}_{t-m:T}\right) = Y_t\left(\mathbf{w}''_{1:t-m-1},\mathbf{w}_{t-m:T}\right)$$

its validity depends on the setting and requires practitioners to use their domain knowledge to choose an appropriate m.

6-58 Week 6: DID and TWFE

- under Assumption 1, an example is  $Y_3(1, 1, 1, 1) = Y_3(1, 1, 1, 0)$
- under Assumption 1 and 2,  $\forall t \in \{m+1, \dots, T\}$  and any 2 paths  $\mathbf{w}_{1:T}, \mathbf{w}'_{1:T} \in \{0, 1\}^{m+1}$ ,

$$\mathbf{w}_{t-m:t} = \mathbf{w}_{t-m:t}' \Rightarrow Y_t\left(\mathbf{w}_{1:T}\right) = Y_t\left(\mathbf{w}_{1:T}'\right)$$

then one can rewrite  $Y_t(\mathbf{w}_{t-m:t}) := Y_t(\mathbf{w}_{1:T})$ , an example is  $Y_3(1,1) := Y_3(1,1,1,1) = Y_3(1,1,1,0) = Y_3(0,1,1,1) = Y_3(0,1,1,0)$ 

for any  $p \in \{0, 1, \dots, T-1\}$ , let  $\mathbf{1}_{p+1} = (1, \dots, 1)$  be a vector of p+1 1s and  $\mathbf{0}_{p+1} = (0, \dots, 0)$  a vector of p+1 0s. The the average lag-p causal effect of consecutive treatments on the outcome is

$$\tau_{p}\left(\mathbb{Y}\right) = \frac{1}{T - p} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \left[ Y_{t}\left(\mathbf{1}_{p+1}\right) - Y_{t}\left(\mathbf{0}_{p+1}\right) \right]$$

where p reflects the designers' knowledge of the order of the **carryover** effect: in the perfect knowledge case, p = m; in the *misspecified* case,  $p \neq m$ . To link the observed and potential outcomes, Bojinov et al. (2023) assume that there is only one version of the treatment, and there is no non-compliance.

The design of switchback experiment induces a probabilistic distribution over assignment paths  $\mathbf{w}_{1:T} \in \{0,1\}': \forall \eta : \{0,1\}^T \mapsto [0,1] \text{ s.t.}$ 

$$\sum_{\gtrapprox_{1:T} \in \left\{0,1\right\}^{T}} \eta\left(\mathbf{w}_{1:T}\right) = 1 \qquad \qquad \eta\left(\mathbf{w}_{1:T}\right) \ge 0, \forall \mathbf{w}_{1:T} \in \left\{0,1\right\}^{T}$$

#### **Definition 6.1.14: Regular Switchback Experiments**

 $\forall \mathbb{T} = \{t_0 = 1 < t_1 < \dots < t_K\} \subseteq [T], \mathbb{Q} = \{q_0, q_1, \dots, q_K\} \in (0, 1)^{K+1}, \text{ a regular switchback experiment } (\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{Q}) \text{ administers a probabilistic treatment at } t, \text{ given by}^a$ 

$$\Pr(W_t = 1) = q_k \text{ if } t_k \le t \le t_{k+1} - 1$$

<sup>a</sup>Think about a biased coin-flip experiment: the designer jointly decides on a collection of randomization points, at each period  $t \in \{t_0, \cdots, t_K\}$  and a collection of *head* probabilities of the coins  $(q_0, \cdots, q_K)$ . If *head* at  $t_k$ , the unit is assigned to treatment during  $(t_k, t_k + 1, \cdots, t_{k+1} - 1)$ , if *tail*, the unit is assigned to control during these periods.

Here, Bojinov et al. (2023) do not consider adaptive treatment assignments as most firms design the entire experiment before the experiment is launched, and the assignments not updated based on the observed outcomes.

Denote the underlying probability distribution using  $\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}}(\cdot)$ , for any  $\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}$ , the distribution has a total of  $2^{K+1}$  many supports, the assignment path is random, and follows

$$\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}}(\mathbf{w}_{1:T}) = \begin{cases} \prod_{k=0}^{K} \frac{\mathbf{1}\{w_{t_k} = 1\}}{q_{t_k}} \cdot \frac{\mathbf{1}\{w_{t_k} = 0\}}{\overline{q}_{t_k}}, & \forall k \in \{0, 1 \cdots, K\}, w_{t_k} = w_{t_k+1} = \cdots = w_{t_{k+1}-1} \\ 0, & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

use the Horvitz-Thompson estimator to estiamte the casual effect:

$$\hat{\tau}_{p}\left(\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}},\mathbf{w}_{1:T},\mathbb{Y}\right) = \frac{1}{T-p} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \left\{ Y_{t}^{obs} \frac{\mathbf{1}\left\{\mathbf{w}_{t-p:t} = \mathbf{1}_{p+1}\right\}}{\Pr\left(\mathbf{W}_{t-p:t} = \mathbf{1}_{p+1}\right)} - Y_{t}^{obs} \frac{\mathbf{1}\left\{\mathbf{w}_{t-p:t} = \mathbf{0}_{p+1}\right\}}{\Pr\left(\mathbf{W}_{t-p:t} = \mathbf{0}_{p+1}\right)} \right\}$$
(6.3)

this estimator depends on the **assignmetn path**  $\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}}$ , the realization of the path  $\mathbf{w}_{1:T}$  and the set of potential outcomes  $\mathbb{Y}$ . Since  $\mathbf{W}_{1:T}$  is random, the Horvitz-Thompson estimator<sup>39</sup> is also random, when the assignment path satisfies a regular switchback, the probabilities in the denominator are known.

### Proposition 6.1.15: Unbiasedness of the Horvitz-Thompson Estimator

In a regular swtichback experiment, under Assumption 6.1.13, the estimator is unbiased for the average lag-p causal effect of consecutive treatments on outcome, i.e.,

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\tau}_{p}\left(\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}},\mathbf{w}_{1:T},\mathbb{Y}\right)\right]=\tau_{p}\left(\mathbb{Y}\right)$$

To evaluate the quality of a design, define the loss function

$$L\left(\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}},\mathbf{w}_{1:T},\mathbb{Y}\right) = \left(\hat{\tau}_{p}\left(\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}},\mathbf{w}_{1:T},\mathbb{Y}\right) - \tau_{p}(\mathbb{Y})\right)^{2}$$

and the least-square type risk function (also the variance of the estimator since it's unbiased)

$$r\left(\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}},\mathbb{Y}\right) = \sum_{\mathbf{w}_{1:T} \in \{0,1\}^T} \eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}}(\mathbf{w}_{1:T}) \cdot \left(\hat{\tau}_p\left(\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}},\mathbf{w}_{1:T},\mathbb{Y}\right) - \tau_p(\mathbb{Y})\right)^2$$

The optimal design problem can then be written as a minmax problem minimizing **worst-case risk** against an adversarial selection of potential outcomes

$$\min_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}} \max_{\mathbb{Y}} r\left(\eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}}, \mathbb{Y}\right) = \min_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}} \max_{\mathbb{Y}} \sum_{\mathbf{w}_{1:T} \in \{0,1\}^T} \eta_{\mathbb{T},\mathbb{Q}}(\mathbf{w}_{1:T}) \cdot \left(\hat{\tau}_p\left(\mathbf{w}_{1:T}, \mathbb{Y}\right) - \tau_p\left(\mathbb{Y}\right)\right)^2$$

an addition assumption on the support of  $\mathbb{Y}$  is imposed s.t. the absolute values are bounded from above:  $\exists B > 0 \text{ s.t.} \forall t \in [T], \mathbf{w} \in \{0,1\}^T$ ,  $|Y_t(\mathbf{w})| \leq B$ , and the bound is attainable at every time period.

Under Assumption 6.1.13 and the bound assumption, we have

### Theorem 6.1.16: Optimality of Fair Coin Flipping

Any optimal design of experiments ( $\mathbb{T}$ ,  $\mathbb{Q}$ ) must satisfy  $q_0 = q_1 = \cdots = q_K = 1/2$ 

For the optimal experiments (fair coin-flipping), the trade-off is between too many randomization points (large K)<sup>40</sup> and two few randomization points (small K)<sup>41</sup>.

### Theorem 6.1.17: Optimal Design of Switchback Experiments

The optimal solution to the design of regular switchback experiment is then the solution of the subset selection problem

$$\min_{\mathbb{T}\subset[T]}\left\{4\sum_{k=0}^{K}(t_{k+1}-t_k)^2+8m(t_K-t_1)+4m^2K-4m^2+4\sum_{k=1}^{K-1}\left[(m-t_{k+1}+t_k)^+\right]^2\right\}$$

This gives

• when m = 0:  $\mathbb{T}^* = \{1, 2, 3, \dots, T\}$ 

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>39</sup>The Horvitz-Thompson estimator is unbiased if treatment and control probabilities are both non-zero.

 $<sup>^{40}</sup>$ Decreasing the probability of observing consecutive treatments  $\mathbf{1}_{m+1}$  or controls  $\mathbf{0}_{m+1}$ , which decreases the amount of useful data.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>41</sup>Decreasing the number of independent observations and reduces the reliability of the results.

6-60 Week 6: DID and TWFE

• when m > 0: if  $\exists n \geq 4 \in \mathbb{N}$  s.t. T = nm, then  $\mathbb{T}^* = \{1, 2m + 1, 3m + 1, \dots, (n-2)m + 1\}$ 

That is, **randomize every** *m* periods. This result has two important implications:

• the optimal randomization frequency depends on the physical duration of the carryover effect, regardless of the granularity of one single experimental period: each period should be set to be almost as long as the order of the carryover effect

• when there are no carryover effects (m = 0) or very little (m = 1), the optimal designs are almost the same: when the granularity is set to be the same as the suspected order of the carryover effect

**Inference and testing** given the observed assignment path  $\mathbf{w}_{1:T}^{obs}$  and the corresponding observed outcomes  $\mathbf{Y}_{1:T}^{obs}$ , Bojinov et al. (2023) propose an exact non-parametric test for the sharp null at every time point

$$H_0: Y_t(\mathbf{w}_{t-m:t}) - Y_t(\mathbf{w}'_{t-m:t}) = 0,$$
  $\forall \mathbf{w}_{t-m:t}, \mathbf{w}'_{t-m:t}, t \in \{m+1:T\}$ 

The sharp null hypothesis implies that  $Y_t(\mathbf{w}_{t-m:t}^{obs}) = Y_t(\mathbf{w}_{t-m:t})$ ,  $\forall \mathbf{w}_{t-m:t} \in \{0,1\}^t$ , that is, same outcomes regardless of the asignment path  $\mathbf{w}_{t-m:t}$ .

Bojinov et al. (2023) propose an algorithm, which depends on the observation that under the shape null hypothesis of no treatment effect, any path  $\mathbf{w}_{1:T}^{[i]}$  leads to the same observed outcomes:

### Algorithm 6.1.18: Sharp-null Hypothesis Test Algorithm

Fix total number of drawn samples *I* 

- for  $i \in 1, \dots, I$ ,
- sample a new assignment path  $\mathbf{w}_{1:T}^{[i]}$  according to the assignment mechanism
- Hold  $Y_{p+1:T}^{obs}$  unchanged, compute  $\hat{\tau}^{[i]}$  according to the Horvitz estimator 6.3 then compute

$$\hat{p}_F = \frac{1}{I} \sum_{i=1}^{I} \mathbf{1} \left\{ \left| \hat{\tau}^{[i]} \right| > \left| \hat{\tau} \right| \right\}$$

. For large I, this is the exact p-value.

based on this algorithm, a conservative test for the null of no average treatment effect is

$$H_0: \tau_m = \frac{1}{T-m} \sum_{t=m+1}^{T} [Y_t(\mathbf{1}_{m+1}) - Y_t(\mathbf{0}_{m+1})] = 0$$

a finite population CLT is then

### Theorem 6.1.19: Asymptotic Normality

For a fixed m,  $\forall n \geq 4 \in \mathbb{N}$ , define a n-replica experiment s.t. there are T = nm time periods, for an optimal design where randomization points are at  $\mathbb{T}^* = \{1, 2m+1, 3m+1, \cdots, (n-2)m+1\}$ , the limiting distribution of the Horvitz-Thompson estimator in the n-replica experiment has an asymptotic normal distribution as  $n \to +\infty$ 

$$\frac{\hat{\tau}_m - \tau_m}{\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}(\hat{\tau}_m)}} \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}(0,1)$$

and  $Var(\hat{\tau}_m)$  does not need to converge.

the variance of the Horvitz-Thompson estimator is

$$\operatorname{Var}(\hat{\tau}_{m}) = \frac{1}{(T-m)^{2}} \left\{ \overline{Y}_{0}(\mathbf{1}_{m+1})^{2} + \overline{Y}_{0}(\mathbf{0}_{m+1})^{2} + 2\overline{Y}_{0}(\mathbf{1}_{m+1})\overline{Y}_{0}(\mathbf{0}_{m+1}) + \sum_{k=1}^{n-3} \left[ 3\overline{Y}_{k}(\mathbf{1}_{m+1})^{2} + 3\overline{Y}_{k}(\mathbf{0}_{m+1})^{2} + 2\overline{Y}(\mathbf{1}_{m+1})\overline{Y}_{k}(\mathbf{0}_{m+1}) \right] + \overline{Y}_{n-2}(\mathbf{1}_{m+1})^{2} + \overline{Y}_{n-2}(\mathbf{0}_{m+1})^{2} + 2\overline{Y}_{n-2}(\mathbf{1}_{m+1})\overline{Y}_{n-2}(\mathbf{0}_{m+1}) + \sum_{k=0}^{n-3} 2\left[ \overline{Y}_{k}(\mathbf{1}_{m+1}) + \overline{Y}_{k}(\mathbf{0}_{m+1}) \right] \cdot \left[ \overline{Y}_{k+1}(\mathbf{1}_{m+1}) + \overline{Y}_{k+1}(\mathbf{0}_{m+1}) \right] \geq \Omega(n^{-1})$$

where  $\overline{Y}_k(\mathbf{1}_{m+1}) = \sum_{t=(k+1)m+1}^{(k+2)m} Y_t(\mathbf{1}_{m+1})$  and  $\overline{Y}_k(\mathbf{0}_{m+1}) = \sum_{t=(k+1)m+1}^{(k+2)m} Y_t(\mathbf{0}_{m+1})$ . This variance has an upper bound  $\operatorname{Var}^u(\hat{\tau}_m)$ , which can be estimated by  $\hat{\sigma}_u^2$  as

$$\hat{\sigma}_{u}^{2} = \frac{1}{(T-m)^{2}} \left\{ 8 \left( \overline{Y}_{0}^{obs} \right)^{2} + \sum_{k=1}^{n-3} 32 \left( \overline{Y}_{k}^{obs} \right) \mathbb{1} \left\{ W_{km+1} = W_{(k+1)m+1} \right\} + 8 \left( \overline{Y}_{n-2}^{obs} \right)^{2} \right\}$$

where  $\overline{Y}_k^{obs} = \sum_{t=(k+1)m+1}^{(k+2)m} Y_t^{obs}$ ,  $\forall k \in \{0,1,\cdots,n-2\}$ . This estimation is unbiased  $\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\sigma}_u^2\right] = \text{Var}\left(\hat{\tau}_m\right)$ . Hence, the test statistic can be calculated as  $z = |\hat{\tau}_m| / \sqrt{\hat{\sigma}_u^2}$ .

When the order of the carryover effect m is misspecified, specifically, consider

- p > m: by Assumption 6.1.13,  $Y_t(\mathbf{1}_{p+1}) = Y_t(\mathbf{1}_{m+1})$ ,  $\forall t \in \{p+1:T\}$ , the lag-p causal effect is essentially the lag-m casual effect, all the estimation and inference results still hold
- p < m: the estimator will be biased, the inference reamins valid

and in both cases, the asymptotic normal distribution is

$$\frac{\hat{\tau}_p - \mathbb{E}[\hat{\tau}_p]}{\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}(\hat{\tau}_p)}} \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}(0,1)$$

**Identify the order of the carryover effect** Consider 2 comparable experimental units<sup>42</sup>, design an optimal experiment  $p = p_1$  for the first unit, get the sampling average  $\hat{\tau}_{p_1}$ , the conservative sampling variance  $\hat{\sigma}_{p_1}^2$ ; and design  $p = p_2$ , calculate  $\hat{\tau}_{p_2}$  and  $\hat{\sigma}_{p_2}^2$  for the second.

Under the null hypothesis:

$$H_0: m \leq p_1$$

 $\tau_{p_1} = \tau_{p_2} = \tau_m$ , both  $\hat{\tau}_{p_1}$  and  $\hat{\tau}_{p_2}$  are unbiased estimators of  $\tau_m$ . Since both estimators are asymptotic normal and independent, we should have

$$\frac{\hat{\tau}_{p_1} - \hat{\tau}_{p_2}}{\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}(\tau_{p_1}) + \operatorname{Var}(\tau_{p_2})}} \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}(0, 1)$$

which can be used to test the null hypothesis. This procedure can then be combined with any search method to identify m.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>42</sup>separate or non-overlapping time epochs on one unit that are far enough s.t. the carry effect from one does not affect the outcomes

6-62 Week 6: DID and TWFE

**Application** there are 2 classes of applications of switchback experiments:

- when units interfere with each other (via network or other complicated structures)
- the number of experimental units is limited, and the effects are likely to be heterogeneous

## 6.1.11.3 Staggered Rollout Design

Xiong et al. (2024) focus on optimally choosing the fraction of adopters in each period in both nonadaptive and adaptive experiment setting.

**Setting: Panel experiments with staggered rollouts and assumptions** Let  $z_{it} \in \{-1, +1\}$  be the treatment variable for unit i at time t:

- treatment is not applied to any unit before the experiment starts:  $z_{it} \equiv -1, \forall i, t \leq 0$
- designer chooses the treatment assignment: choose  $z_{it}$  for  $i=1,\cdots,N; t=1,\cdots,T$
- the decision variables are written as  $Z = [z_{it}]_{(i,t)\in[N]\times[T]}$ , corresponding to an observed outcome  $Y = [Y_{it}]_{(i,t)\in[N]\times[T]}$

Consider 2 types of panel experiments: **nonadaptive** and **adaptive** experiments:

- nonadaptive experiments: *N* and *T* both fixed
- adaptive experiments: *N* fixed, *T* unknown

### Assumption 6.1.20: Assumptions of Xiong et al. (2024)

A1 Irreversible Treatment Adoption:  $\forall (i,t) \in [N] \times [T], z_{it} \leq z_{i,t+1}^a$ 

A2 **Potential Outcome Model**: the potential outcomes for unit i at time t can be written as

$$Y_{it}(z_{i,t-1},\cdots,z_{i,t-1},z_{it})$$

for a known integer  $l \ge 0^b$ 

Xiong et al. (2024) allow for carryover effects up to l periods in the past, the average instantaneous effect  $tau_0$  and lagged effects  $\tau_1, \dots, \tau_l$  are defined as,  $\forall j \in \{0\} \cup [l]$ ,

$$\tau_j \coloneqq \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \frac{1}{2} \left[ Y_{it} \left( -1, \cdots, -1, \underbrace{+1}_{z_{i,t-j}}, +1, \cdots, +1 \right) - Y_{it} \left( -1, \cdots, -1, \underbrace{-1}_{z_{i,t-j}}, +1, \cdots, +1 \right) \right]$$

 $\tau_j$  is the average over individuals and time periods of individual-time specific treatment effects that can be heterogeneous in both units and time periods.

**Nonadaptive experiments** Consider the GLS estimator for  $\tau_0$ ,  $\tau_1$ ,  $\cdots$ ,  $\tau_l$  based on the following specification:

$$Y_{it} = \alpha_i + \beta_t + \mathbf{X}_i' \boldsymbol{\theta}_t + \tau_0 z_{it} + \tau_1 z_{i,t-1} + \dots + \tau_l z_{i,t-l} + \underbrace{\mathbf{u}_i' \mathbf{v}_t + \epsilon_{it}}_{2}$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup>This echoes the practical constraints of switching (group-level treatment, electronic roll-out.)

 $<sup>{}^{</sup>b}$ This rules out the spillover effects and anticipation effects.

where  $\alpha_i$  and  $\beta$  are unobserved unit and time FEs,  $\mathbf{X}_i \in \mathbb{R}^{d_x}$  are time-invariant observed covariates,  $\mathbf{u}_i \in \mathbb{R}^{d_u}$  are latent covariates.

Assuming the error structure to be:

- $\mathbf{v}_t \in \mathbb{R}^{d_u}$  is i.i.d. in t, with  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{v}_t \mid \boldsymbol{\xi}_{it}] = 0$  and  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{v}_t \mathbf{v}_s' \mid \boldsymbol{\xi}_{it}, \boldsymbol{\xi}_{js}] = \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_v \cdot \mathbf{1}_{t=s}, \ \forall i, j, t, s, \ \text{where } \boldsymbol{\xi}_{it} = (\mathbf{X}_i, z_{it}, \dots, z_{i-l,t}).$
- $\epsilon_{it}$  is i.i.d. in i and t, with  $\mathbb{E}[\epsilon_{it} \mid \xi_{it}] = 0$  and  $\mathbb{E}[\epsilon_{it}\epsilon_{js} \mid \xi_{it}, \xi_{js}] = \sigma_{\epsilon}^2 \cdot \mathbf{1}_{i=j,t=s}, \forall i, j, t, s$ .
- $\epsilon_{it}$  is independent of  $\mathbf{v}_s$ ,  $\forall i, t, s$ .

then  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{v}_t] = 0$  holds w.l.o.g., and

$$\mathbb{E}[e_{it}] = 0 \qquad \mathbb{E}\left[e_{it}^2\right] = \mathbf{u}_i' \mathbf{\Sigma}_v \mathbf{u}_i + \sigma_{\epsilon}^2 \qquad \mathbb{E}\left[e_{it}e_{jt}\right] = \mathbf{u}_i' \mathbf{\Sigma} \mathbf{u}_j \qquad \mathbb{E}[e_{it}e_{js}] = 0, t \neq s$$

that is,  $e_{it}$  is only correlated in the unit dimension.

The GLS estimator is the best linear unbiased estimator, it has the smallest variance, and there is an explicit formula for the variance and precision of GLS in terms of  $z_{it}$ . The GLS weight matrix **W** is optimal when  $\mathbf{W} \propto (\mathbf{U}\Sigma\mathbf{U}' + \sigma_{\varepsilon}^2\mathbf{I}_N)^{-1}$ , with  $\mathbf{U} = [\mathbf{u}_i]_{i \in [N]}$ . The optimal **W** is unknown, one can use the OLS estimate  $\hat{\mathbf{W}}$ .

To solve the optimal Z based on the statistical properties of GLS. To estimate  $\tau$  precisely, one need to consider an objective function that summarizes the precision of each of  $\hat{\tau}_0, \dots, \hat{\tau}_l$  into a scalar, there are 2 categories of objective functions of interest:

- balancing the precision/variance of each of  $\hat{\tau}_0, \dots, \hat{\tau}_l$ 
  - A-optimal design: minimizes the trace of  $Var(\hat{\tau})$
  - D-optimal design: minimizes the determinant of  $Var(\hat{\tau})$
  - T-optimal design: maximizes the trace of the inverse of  $Var(\hat{\tau})$
- maximizing the precision of some linear combination of  $\hat{\tau}_0, \dots, \hat{\tau}_l$ 
  - cumulative effect  $\left(\sum_{j=0}^{l} \tau_{j}\right)$ : minimizes  $\operatorname{Var}\left(\sum_{j=0}^{l} \hat{\tau}_{j}\right)$

Consider the T-optimal design:

$$\max_{\Delta} \operatorname{tr} \left( \operatorname{Prec} \left( \hat{\tau}; A \right) \right) \tag{6.4}$$

where  $\operatorname{Prec}(\hat{\tau}; A)$  is the precision matrix of  $\tau$  (the matrix inverse of the var-cov matrix of  $\tau$ ) when A is used <sup>43</sup>.

**Optimal solutions** THe optimality conditions disentagle the effect of different components (2WFEs, observed covars, latent covars) on the optimal treatment assignments,

• **TWFE** and l = 0: suppose  $Y_{it} = \alpha_i + \beta_t + \tau_0 z_{it} + \epsilon_{it}$ , then the objective function in 6.4 is

$$\operatorname{Prec}(\hat{\tau}_0; A) = \frac{N}{\sigma_c^2} \left[ -2\mathbf{b}_T' \boldsymbol{\omega} - \boldsymbol{\omega}' \mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{1}_T} \boldsymbol{\omega} \right]$$

where  $\boldsymbol{\omega} = [\omega_t]_{t \in [T]}$  with  $w_t = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N z_{it}$ ,  $\mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{1}_T} = \mathbf{I}_T - \mathbf{1}_T \mathbf{1}_T'/T$  and  $\mathbf{b}_T = [b_t]$  with  $b_t = (T+1-2t)/T$ . Solving the FOC, get the optimal design  $\omega_t^* = -b_t$ .

both are non-convex, hence, FOC generally is generally not sufficient to solve the global optimal solution.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>43</sup>Each entry in  $Var(\hat{\tau})$  is a ratio of two polynomial function of  $z_{it}$ , where the degrees of numerator and denominator are 2l and 2(l+1), respectively, for  $l \ge 1$ . The objective of

<sup>•</sup> A-optimal design is sums of entries in  $Var(\hat{\tau})$ 

<sup>•</sup> D-optimal design is the inverse of a 2(l+1)th order polynomial function of  $z_{it}$ 

6-64 Week 6: DID and TWFE

• l > 0, without  $X_i$  or  $u_i$ : the objective function is still quadratic and concave in  $\omega$  but more complicated, the optimal treated fraction is non-linear:

$$\omega_{l,t}^{*} = \begin{cases} -1 & t \leq \lfloor l/2 \rfloor \\ a_{t-\lfloor l/2 \rfloor}^{(l)} & \lfloor l/2 \rfloor < t \leq l \\ -1 + \frac{2t - (l+1)}{T - l} & l < t \leq T - l \\ -\omega_{l,T+1-t}^{*} & T - l < t \leq T - \lfloor l/2 \rfloor \\ 1 & T - \lfloor l/2 \rfloor < t \end{cases}$$
(6.5)

This is a 5-stage S-shaped curve in *t*:

S1  $t \leq \lfloor l/2 \rfloor$ : all units under control

S2  $\lfloor l/2 \rfloor t \leq l$ : treated fraction grows nonlinearly

S3  $\omega_t^*$  grows linearly in time

S4  $\omega_t^*$  grows nonlinearly in time

S5 all units are under treatment

More generally, consider the solution concepts:

- let  $\mathbb{A}_l = \left\{ A : \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \mathbf{1}_{A_i \le t} = (1 + \omega_{l,t}^*)/2, \forall t \right\}$  be the set of designs satisfying 6.5
- let  $\mathbb{A}_{\mathbf{X}} = \left\{ A : \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathbf{X}_{i} \mathbf{1}_{A_{i}=t} = \mathbf{0}_{d_{x}}, \forall t \in \{2, \cdots, T\} \right\}$  be the set of designs satisfying covariates balancing conditions
- let  $\mathbb{A}_U$  defined similarly as  $\mathbb{A}_X$

then the optimal condition is given as

### Theorem 6.1.21: Xiong et al. (2024)'s optimality conditions: nonadaptive experiments

Under Assumption 6.1.20,  $\hat{\tau}$  is estimated from the infeasible GLS with  $\mathbf{W} \propto (\mathbf{U}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{U}' + \sigma_{\epsilon}^2\mathbf{I}_N)^{-1}$ , rows in  $\mathbf{X}$  and  $\mathbf{U}$  are centered<sup>a</sup>, and  $\mathbf{X}$ ,  $\mathbf{U}$  are orthogonal<sup>b</sup>  $(\sum_{i=1}^{N}\mathbf{X}_i\mathbf{u}_i' = \mathbf{0}_{d_x\times d_u})$ ,  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_v = \sigma_{\epsilon}^2 \cdot \mathbf{I}_{d_u}$ , and  $T > (l^3 + 13l^2 + 7l + 3)/(8l)$ , the set of optimal treatment designs are

$$\mathbb{A}_{opt} = \mathbb{A}_l \cap \mathbb{A}_{\mathbf{X}} \cap \mathbb{A}_{\mathbf{U}}$$

When  $X_i$  and  $u_i$  are both discrete, then

$$\mathbb{A}_{opt}^{\text{disc}} = \left\{ A : \frac{1}{|O_g|} \sum_{i \in O_g} \mathbf{1}_{A_i \le t} = \frac{1 + \omega_{l,t}^*}{2}, \forall t, g \right\} \qquad O_g \left\{ i : (\mathbf{X}_i, \mathbf{u}_i) = (x_g, u_g) \right\}$$

The optimal treatment designs  $\mathbb{A}_{opt}$  do **not** depend on the value of  $\tau$ , due to the fact that the estimation error  $\hat{\tau} - \tau$  from GLS does not depend on the value of  $\tau$ . Some examples of the optimal treated fractions are

- l = 0 and only time fixed effects,  $Y_{it} = \beta_t + \tau_0 z_{it} + \epsilon_{it}$ : then  $\operatorname{Prec}(\hat{\tau}_0) = N/\sigma_{\epsilon}^2 \cdot \left[T \sum_{t=1}^T \omega_t^2\right]$ . Any treatment design is optimal if  $\omega_t^* = 0$ ,  $\forall t$  and  $z_{it} \leq z_{i,t+1}$ ,  $\forall i, t$  (50-50 split for all time periods).
- l=0 and only unit fixed effects,  $Y_{it}=\alpha_t+\tau_0z_{it}+\epsilon_{it}$ : then  $\operatorname{Prec}(\hat{\tau}_0)=T/\sigma_\epsilon^2\cdot\left[N-\sum_{i=1}^N\xi_t^2\right]$  where  $\xi_i=\sum_{t=1}^Tz_{it}/T$ . Any treatment design is optimal if  $\omega_t^*=-1$ ,  $\forall t<(T+1)/2$  and  $\omega_t^*=1$ , forallt>(T+1)/2 (treatment to all units at halftime).

 $a\sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathbf{X}_i = \mathbf{0}_{d_x}$  and  $\sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathbf{u}_i = \mathbf{0}_{d_u}$ , can be achieved by controlling for unit fixed effects  $\alpha$ ,  $\mathbf{X}_i$  and  $\mathbf{u}_i$  impose additional covariate balancing conditions (strata).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>b</sup>Orthogonality can be achieved bia Gram-Schmidt procedure (i.e., QR decomposition.)

- both  $\alpha_i$  and  $\beta_t$ : the optimal treated fractions are in between the two
- l = 1:  $\omega_{l,t}^* = -1 + 2(t-1)/(T-1), \forall t$
- l = 2:  $\omega_{l,1}^* = -1$ ;  $\omega_{l,2}^* = -1 + 2/(2T 5)$ ;  $\omega_{l,t}^* = -1 + (2t 3)/(T 2)$ ,  $t = 3, \dots, T 2$ ;  $\omega_{l,T-1}^* = 1 2/(2T 5)$ ;  $\omega_{l,T}^* = 1$

Since the objective function in 6.4 is a **sum** of l+1 quadratic functions, one for each  $\operatorname{Prec}\left(\hat{\tau}_{j}\right)$ ,  $j=0,1,\cdots,l$ . Let  $\omega_{l,t}^{*}(j)$  be the unit average of  $z_{it}$  the maximizes  $\operatorname{Prec}\left(\hat{\tau}_{j}\right)$  at time t when the lagged effect duration is l. So the  $\omega_{l,t}^{*}$  in 6.5 is a convex combination of  $\omega_{l,t}^{*}(j)$  for all j and t. Each  $\omega_{l,t}^{*}(j)$  maximizes the precision of  $\hat{\tau}_{j}$ , so it should grow linearly in t, except during the first l (truncated to 0) or last l periods (truncated to 1), which generate the S-shaped growing the treatment size.

### **Guidance** on choosing a treatment design

- no covariates  $d_x = d_u = 0$  and  $\mathbb{A}_l$  not empty: randomly choose one from  $\mathbb{A}_l$  with equal probability
- when discrete-valued covariates  $d_x \neq 0$  and  $\mathbb{A}_{opt}^{disc}$  not empty: randomly choose one from  $\mathbb{A}_l^{disc}$  with equal probability
- if  $|O_g|(1+\omega_{l,t}^*)/(2T)$  is not an integer for each stratum,  $\mathbb{A}_{opt}^{disc}$  empty
- if observed covariates are continuous: partition units into a small number of strata and then randomly choose a design that satisfies the treated fraction conditions for each stratum
- if there are latent covariates: using historical control data to estimate  $\mathbf{u}_i$ , partitioning units into strata and choosing treatment design based on  $\hat{\mathbf{u}}_i$ .

**Adaptive experiments** In adaptive experiments, experiments can be terminated early to reduce the cost, instead of running  $T_{\text{max}}$  periods. Consider a fixed N and a varying duration  $\tilde{T} \in [T_{\text{max}}]$ . At any t, the experimenter decides whether to terminate the experiment, if the experiment stops,  $\tilde{T}$  is realized as t; otherwise the experimenter makes treatment decisions for t+1.

For the specification of the observed outcome of unit i at time s:

$$Y_{is} = \alpha_i + \beta_s + \tau z_{is} + \epsilon_{is}$$
  $\forall i \in [N], s \in [\tilde{T}]$ 

and the instantaneous effect denoted as  $\tau$ . Consider the criterion to terminate the experiment of the precision exceeds a target threshold c at t:

$$\operatorname{Prec}(\hat{\tau}; \boldsymbol{\omega}) = \frac{Nt}{\sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}} \cdot \frac{-2\mathbf{b}_{t}' \boldsymbol{\omega}_{1:t} - \boldsymbol{\omega}_{1:t}' \mathbf{P}_{1_{t}} \boldsymbol{\omega}_{1:t}}{t} \ge c$$

$$(6.6)$$

Xiong et al. (2024) develops a precision-based rule to terminate the experiment to tackle 3 challenges:

- in nonadaptive experiments,  $\omega_s^* = (2s 1 \tilde{T})/\tilde{T}$ , in adaptive experiments,  $\tilde{T}$  is unknown.
- estimating  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  is difficult: having the precision indeed exceed c when terminated; post-experiment inference
- efficient estimation of  $\tau$  post-experiment

3 estimators are most common. Suppose the estimators use the data of units in a set S over t periods so far, t is small but the set size |S| can be large:

• **Within** estimator:  $\hat{\tau}_{S,t}$  is estimated from running  $\dot{Y} = \tau \dot{z}_{is} + \dot{\epsilon}_{is}$ , where the within transformation is

$$\dot{x}_{is} = x_i s - \overline{x}_i - \overline{x}_s + \overline{x}$$

6-66 Week 6: DID and TWFE

• **Plugin** estimator:  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  can be estimated as

$$\hat{\sigma}_{\mathcal{S},t}^2 = \frac{1}{|\mathcal{S}| \cdot (t-1)} \sum_{i \in \mathcal{S}} \sum_{s=1}^t \left( \dot{y}_{is} - \hat{\tau}_{\mathcal{S},t} \cdot \dot{z}_{is} \right)^2$$

• **Bias-corrected** estimator: estimate the variance of  $\epsilon_{is}^2$ , that is  $\xi_{\epsilon}^2 := \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\epsilon_{is}^2 - \sigma_{\epsilon}^2\right)^2\right]$ , which quantifies the uncertainty of the estimated  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$ , as

$$\hat{\xi}_{\mathcal{S},t}^{2} = \underbrace{\frac{t^{2}}{(t-1)^{2}}}_{\text{correction multiplier}} \cdot \underbrace{\frac{1}{|\mathcal{S}| \cdot t} \sum_{i \in \mathcal{S}} \left( \sum_{s=1}^{t} \left[ \left( \dot{y}_{is} - \hat{\tau}_{\mathcal{S},t} \cdot \dot{z}_{is} \right)^{2} - \hat{\sigma}_{\mathcal{S},t}^{2} \right] \right)^{2}}_{\text{plug-in estimator of } \xi_{\varepsilon}^{2}} - \underbrace{\frac{3t-2}{(t-1)^{2}} \cdot \left( \hat{\sigma}_{\mathcal{S},t}^{2} \right)^{2}}_{\text{correction term}}$$

the plug-in estimator is biased since  $(\dot{y}_{is} - \hat{\tau}_{S,t} \cdot \dot{z}_{is})^2$  is biased. The bias is squared and cannot be averaged out over i.

Xiong et al. (2024) propose PGAE via dynamic programming by partitioning units into 3 mutually disjoint subsets:

- nonadaptive treatment untis (NTU):  $S_{ntu}$
- two adaptive treatment units (ATU):  $S_{atu,1}$  and  $S_{atu,2}$

the fractions of the 3 sets are:  $p_{ntu} = |\mathcal{S}_{ntu}|/N$ ,  $p_{atu,1} = |\mathcal{S}_{atu,1}|/N$ ,  $p_{atu,2} = |\mathcal{S}_{atu,2}|/N$ , the sets are selected s.t.  $p_{ntu}$  is small,  $p_{atu,1} = p_{atu,2}$  and  $p_{ntu} + p_{atu,1} + p_{atu,2} = 1$ .

The basic logic is:

- 1 before the experiment starts: initialize the treatment design of  $S_{ntu}$ ,  $S_{atu,1}$ ,  $S_{atu,2}$  by the optimal design of a  $T_{\text{max}}$ -period nonadaptive experiment (benchmark, without early stopping) the average of  $z_{is}$  over i in each set satisfies  $\omega_{bm,s} = (2s 1 T_{\text{max}})/T_{\text{max}}$ ,  $\forall s \in [T_{\text{max}}]$ .
- 2 the treatment design of NTU does not change during the experiment, stays equal to  $\omega_{bm}$ , the observed data from NTU is used to update thte treatment assignments of ATU for subsequent periods.
- 3  $\mathcal{S}_{atu,1}$  is used to estimate  $\sigma^2_\epsilon$  and decide whether to terminate the experiment
- 4  $S_{atu,2}$  is used to provide another estimate of  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  for experiment inference

PGAE addresses 3 main challenges:

• **choosing a treatment design**:  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  is unknown in practice, construct the belief distribution of  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  instead, and draw sample  $\sigma^2$ , plug it into the stopping rule 6.6, repeat this procedure over sampled  $\sigma^2$ s, obtain an empirical distribution of  $\tilde{P}$  as  $P_t(\tilde{T})$ .

To construct the distribution of  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$ , first estimate  $\hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2$  with the plug-in estimator using NTU data for t periods, it is an consistent estimator of  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  and asymptotically normal:

$$\sqrt{|\mathcal{S}_{ntu}| \cdot t} \cdot \frac{\hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2 - \sigma_{\epsilon}^2}{\hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^+} \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}(0,1)$$

where  $\hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^+ = \sqrt{\hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^2 + \left(\hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2\right)^2/(t-1)}$  and  $\hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^2$  is estimated following the bias-corrected estimator. Let  $\sqrt{|\mathcal{S}_{ntu}| \cdot t} \cdot \frac{\hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2 - \sigma_{\epsilon}^2}{\hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^2} \equiv w$ , then

$$\sigma_{\epsilon}^2 = \hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2 - w \cdot \hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^+ / \sqrt{|S_{ntu}| \cdot t}$$

then repeat this formula with samples of w from  $\mathcal{N}(0,1)$  to construct the belief distribution of  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$ .

The treatment decision for ATU is then solved by a dynamic program problem:

- **state variable**: the treated fractions up to t,  $\omega_{atu,1:t}$
- **decision variable**: the treated fraction of the next period  $\omega_{t+1}$
- terminate cost:  $-\tilde{T} \cdot g_{\tau} \left( \left( \omega_{atu,1:t}, \omega_{t+1:\tilde{T}} \right), \tilde{T} \right)$

the problem is to solve  $\omega_{t+1}$  that minimizers the expected terminat cost, given the random experiment duration  $\tilde{T}$ :

$$\omega_t = \arg\min_{\omega_t} \mathbb{E}_{\tilde{T} \sim P_t(\tilde{T})} \left[ -\tilde{T} \cdot g_{\tau} \left( \left( \boldsymbol{\omega}_{atu,1:t}, \boldsymbol{\omega}_{t+1:\tilde{T}} \right), \tilde{T} \right) \right] \text{ s.t. } \omega_{atu,t} \leq \omega_{t+1} \leq \omega_{t+1} \leq \cdots \leq \omega_{T_{\max}}$$

### • implementing the termination rule:

- use data in  $\mathcal{S}_{atu,1}$  to estimate  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  at time t as  $\hat{\sigma}_{atu,1,t}^2$
- plug  $\hat{\sigma}_{atu,1,t}^2$  and  $\omega_{bm,1:t}$  into the termination rule to estimate the precision

 $\omega_{bm,1:t}$  underestimate the precision, so the termination is conservative

#### • efficient estimation and valid inference for $\tau$ :

- estimate  $\tau$  using all NTU data and ATU over  $\tilde{T}$  periods:  $\hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$  is efficient and achieves the optimal convergence rate
- estimate  $\sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  using  $S_{atu,2}$ :  $\hat{\sigma}_{atu,2,\tilde{T}}^2$  is consistent, can be use to estimate  $var(\hat{\tau})$  and sufficient to construct valid CIs for  $\tau$
- tradeoff: CIs are estimated less precisely with a larger second order error term with a smaller sample size

### Algorithm 6.1.22: PGAE (Xiong et al., 2024)

```
algorithm pgae(N, T_{\text{max}}, \omega_{bm}, c, p_{ntu}, m, t_0):
```

- 1 partition\_initialize( $N, p_{ntu}, T_{max}$ )  $\rightarrow Z_{ntu}, Z_{atu,1}, Z_{atu,2}$
- 2 run the experiment for  $t_0$  time periods
- 3 estimate\_var\_prec( $Z_{atu,1,1:t}$ ,  $Y_{atu,1,1:t}$ ,  $\omega_{bm}$ , N,  $n_{atu}$ , t)  $\rightarrow \hat{\sigma}^2_{atu,1,t}$ ,  $\widehat{Prec}_{atu,1,t}$
- 4 while  $\widehat{Prec}_{atu,1,t} < c$  and  $t < T_{\text{max}}$  do
  - estimate\_belief  $(Z_{ntu,1:t}, Y_{ntu,1:t}, N, \omega_{bm}, T_{\max}, t, m, c) \rightarrow P_t(\cdot)$
  - update\_treatment\_design $(Z_{atu,1,1:t}, Z_{atu,2,1:t}, \omega_{atu,1:t}, T_{max}, t) \rightarrow Z_{atu,1,t+1}, Z_{atu,2,t+1}$
  - run the experiment for t + 1
  - estimate\_var\_prec( $Z_{atu,1,1:t}$ ,  $Y_{atu,1,1:t}$ ,  $\omega_{bm}$ , N,  $n_{atu}$ , t)  $\rightarrow \hat{\sigma}^2_{atu,1.t}$ ,  $\widehat{Prec}_{atu,1,t}$

end

5 within estimator of  $\tau$  from both NTU and ATU  $\rightarrow \hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$ ,  $t \rightarrow \tilde{T}$ 

 $\text{6 estimate\_var\_prec}\left(Z_{atu,2,1:\tilde{T}},Y_{atu,2,1:\tilde{T}},\boldsymbol{\omega}_{bm},N,n_{atu},\tilde{T}\right) \rightarrow \hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}},\hat{\sigma}_{atu,2:\tilde{T}}^{2}$ 

return:  $\tilde{T}$ ,  $\hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$ ,  $\hat{\sigma}_{atu,2,\tilde{T}}^2$ 

And assuming  $\epsilon_{is}$  i.i.d., with  $\mathbb{E}[\epsilon_{is}] = 0$ ,  $\mathbb{E}[\epsilon_{is}^2] = \sigma_{\epsilon}^2$ ,  $\mathbb{E}[\epsilon_{is}^3] = 0$ ,  $\mathbb{E}[(\epsilon_{is}^2 - \sigma_{\epsilon}^2)^2] = \xi_{\epsilon}^2$ , then as  $|S_{ntu}| \to \infty$ ,  $\forall t$ , conditional on  $Z_{ntu}$ , we have

$$\sqrt{|\mathcal{S}_{ntu}|} \left( \begin{bmatrix} \hat{\tau}_{ntu,t} \\ \hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2 \end{bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} \tau \\ \sigma_{\epsilon}^2 \end{bmatrix} \right) \stackrel{d}{\to} \mathcal{N} \left( \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{\epsilon}^2 / (t \cdot g_{\tau}(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{ntu,1:t}, t)) & 0 \\ 0 & \xi_{\epsilon,t}^{+2} / t \end{bmatrix} \right)$$
(6.7)

6-68 Week 6: DID and TWFE

where  $\xi_{\epsilon,t}^{+2}/t = \xi_{\epsilon}^2 + 2(\sigma_{\epsilon}^2)^2/(t-1)$ , and  $\sqrt{|S_{ntu}|} \left(\hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^2 - \xi_{\epsilon}^2\right) = O_p(1)$ .  $\hat{\tau}_{ntu,t}$  and  $\hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2$  are consistent and asymptotically independent since  $\epsilon_{is}$  is uncorrelated with both  $\epsilon_{ju}^2 - \sigma_{\epsilon}^2$  and  $\epsilon_{ju}\epsilon_{jv}$  for all i, j, s, u, v since  $\epsilon_{is}$  is i.i.d. in i and s and has 0 first and third moments.

Next,  $\hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$  and  $\hat{\sigma}_{atu,2,\tilde{T}}^2$  from PGAE can also be used for post-experiment inference for  $\tau$ : under the same assumptions, and  $p_{ntu} \in (0,1)$  is a fixed number as N grows, we have

$$\sqrt{N} \cdot \left[ \sqrt{\tilde{T} g_{\tau} \left( \omega_{all,1:\tilde{T}} \right) / \sigma_{\epsilon}^{2}} \cdot \left( \hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}} - \tau \right) \right] \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N} \left( \mathbf{0}, I_{2} \right)$$

$$\sqrt{\tilde{T} p_{atu,2} / \xi_{\epsilon,\tilde{T}}^{+2}} \cdot \left( \hat{\sigma}_{atu,2,\tilde{T}}^{2}, \sigma_{\epsilon}^{2} \right) \right] \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N} \left( \mathbf{0}, I_{2} \right)$$

and  $\hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$  is consistent with optimal convergence rate  $\sqrt{N}^{44}.$ 

**Carryover model with covariates** for specifications with l > 0 and  $X_i$ , one can

- use within estimator for  $\tau_0$ ,  $\cdot$ ,  $\tau_l$  by regressing  $\dot{Y}_{it}$  on  $\dot{z}_{it}$ ,  $\cdots$ ,  $\dot{z}_{i,t-l}$ ,  $X_i$
- for the experiment termination rule: generalize 6.6 to tr (Prec  $(\hat{\tau})$ )  $\geq c$
- partition units into strata based on  $X_i$ , within each stratum, one can apply the algorithm

for specifications with  $\mathbf{u}_i$ , one can

- ignore  $\mathbf{u}_i$  and run PGAE as if without  $\mathbf{u}_i$ , and post-experiment GLS to estimate a more precise  $\hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$
- use historical data to estimate  $\mathbf{u}_i$ , partition units into strata, run PGAE on each

#### 6.1.11.4 Design with dynamic effects

**Bojinov et al. (2021)** allow for dynamics in the treatment effects and essentially unrestricted heterogeneity: consider a panel where N units are observed over T periods, for each unit  $i \in [N]$  and period  $t \in [T]$ , allocate an assignment  $W_{i,t} \in \mathcal{W}$ , where  $|\mathcal{W}| < \infty$ , for a binary assignment,  $\mathcal{W} = \{0,1\}$ . Then, define

- assignment path:  $W_{i,1:T} := (W_{i,1}, \cdots, W_{i,T})' \in \mathcal{W}^T$  the sequence of assignments allocated to unit i
- cross-sectional assignment at  $t: W_{1:N,t} := (W_{1,t}, \dots, W_{N,t})' \in \mathcal{W}^N$
- assignment panel of all units over the sample period:  $W_{1:N,1:T} \in \mathcal{W}^{N \times T} := (W_{1:N,1}, \cdots W_{1:N,T}) = (W'_{1,1:T}, \cdot, W'_{N,1:T})'$
- potential outcome along path  $w_{i,1:T} \in \mathcal{W}^T$ :  $Y_{i,t}(w_{i,1:T})$  (no spillovers)
- sequentially randomized assignments:  $\forall t \in [T], w_{1:N,1:t-1} \in \mathcal{W}^{N \times (t-1)}$ ,

$$\Pr\left(W_{1:N,t} \mid W_{1:N,1:t-1} = w_{1:N,1:t-1}, Y_{1:N,1:T}\right) = \Pr\left(W_{1:N,t} \mid W_{1:N,1:t-1} = w_{1:N,1:t-1}, Y_{1:N,1:t-1} \mid w_{1:N,1:t-1}\right)$$

the assignment mechanism for each period only depend on past assignments and observed outcomes, not on future potential outcomes nor unobserved past potential outcomes

• individualistic assignments for i: if  $\forall t \in [T], w_{1:N,1:t-1} \in \mathcal{W}^{N \times (t-1)}$ 

$$\Pr(W_{i,t} \mid W_{-i,t}, \mathcal{F}_{1:N,t-1,T}) = \Pr(W_{i,t} \mid W_{1:t-1} = w_{i,1:t-1}, Y_{i,1:t-1}(w_{i,1:t-1}))$$

the assignment for i at t is independent of the past assignments, outcomes of all other units, all other contemporaneous assignments

# and non-anticipating is assumed

 $<sup>4\</sup>hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$  depends on treatment designs, hence  $\hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2$  and  $\hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^2$ , and  $\epsilon_{is}$  for  $i \in \mathcal{S}_{ntu}$ . In addition,  $\hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$  depends on  $\tilde{T}$ , which depends on  $\hat{\sigma}_{atu,1,t}^2$ , hence  $\epsilon_i$  for  $i \in \mathcal{S}_{atu,1}$ . But the  $\hat{\tau}_{all,\tilde{T}}$  is still consistent since  $\hat{\sigma}_{ntu,t}^2$ ,  $\hat{\xi}_{ntu,t}^2$  and  $\hat{\sigma}_{atu,1,t}^2$  are all **even** moments of  $\epsilon_{is}$ .

### Assumption 6.1.23: Bojinov et al. (2021) Assumption 1

The potential outcomes are nonparticipating if  $\forall i \in [N], t \in [T]$ , and  $w_{i,1:T}, \tilde{w}_{i,1:T} \in \mathcal{W}^T$ ,  $Y_{i,t}(w_{i,1:T}) =$  $Y_{i,t}(\tilde{w}_{i,1:T})$  whenever  $w_{i,1:t} = \tilde{w}_{i,1:t}$ .

Under Assumption 6.1.23, the potential outcome for i at t only depends on the assignment path for i up to t, then the potential outcomes can be written as  $Y_{i,t}(w_{i,1:t})$ , the collection of potential outcomes for i at t as  $\mathbf{Y}_{i,t} = \{Y_{i,t}(w_{i,1:t}) : w_{i,1:t} \in \mathcal{W}^t\}$ , the collection of potential outcomes for all units across all time periods as  $\mathbf{Y}_{1:N,1:T} = \{\mathbf{Y}_{i,t}: i \in [N], t \in [T]\}$ , the observed outcomes are  $y_{i,1:T}^{obs} = Y_{i,1:T}\left(w_{i,1:T}^{obs}\right)$  for the observed assignment path  $w_{i,1:T}^{obs}$ .

Dynamic causal effects compare the potential outcomes for i at t along different assignment paths, Bojinov et al. (2021) focus on lag-p dynamic causal effects,

# Definition 6.1.24: lag-p dynamic causal effect

• For  $0 \le p < t$  and  $\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}} \in \mathcal{W}^{p+1}$ , the *i*, *t*th lag-*p* dynamic causal effect is

$$\tau_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) \coloneqq \begin{cases} \tau_{i,t}\left(\left\{w_{i,1:t-p-1}^{obs}, \mathbf{w}\right\}, \left\{w_{i,1:t-p-1}^{obs}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}\right\}\right), & p < t-1\\ \tau_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}\right), & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

it measures the difference between the outcomes from following assignment path w from period t-p to t compared to the alternative path  $\tilde{\mathbf{w}}$ , fixing the assignments for unit t to follow the observed path up to t - p - 1, when  $N \gg T$ , p = t - 1 is recommended (remove the dependence on the

• For integers p, q satisfying  $0 \le p < t$ ,  $0 < q \le p + 1$ , the weighted average i, tth lag-p, q dynamic causal effect is

$$\tau_{i,t}^+\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p,q\right) \coloneqq \sum_{\mathbf{v} \in \mathcal{W}^{p-q+1}} a_{\mathbf{v}} \tau_{i,t}\left((\mathbf{w},\mathbf{v}),(\tilde{\mathbf{w}},\mathbf{v});p\right)$$

where  $\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}} \in \mathcal{W}^q$  and  $\{a_{\mathbf{v}}\}$  are nonstochastic weights satisfying  $\sum_{\mathbf{v} \in \mathcal{W}^{p-q+1}} a_{\mathbf{v}} = 1$ , and  $a_{\mathbf{v}} \geq 0$  for all  $\mathbf{v} \in \mathcal{W}^{p-q+1}$ . It summarizes the ceteris paribus average causal effect of switching the assignment path between t - p and t - p + q from w to  $\tilde{\mathbf{w}}$  on outcomes at time t. It is a finite-population causal generalization of an impulse response function.

- For p < T and  $\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}} \in \mathcal{W}^{p+1}$ ,

  - time t lag-p average dynamic causal effect is  $\overline{\tau}_{\cdot t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) \coloneqq \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \tau_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)$  unit i lag-p average dynamic causal effect is  $\overline{\tau}_{i\cdot}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) \coloneqq \frac{1}{T-p} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \tau_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)$
  - total lag-p average dynamic causal effect is  $\overline{\tau}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p) \coloneqq \frac{1}{N(T-p)} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \tau_{i,t}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p)$

these can be augmented by incorporating nonstochastic weights.

For each i, t and any  $\mathbf{w} = (w_1, \dots, w_{p+1}) \in \mathcal{W}^{p+1}$ , the **adapted propensity score** summarizes the conditional probability of a given assignment path and is given by

$$p_{i,t-p}\left(\mathbf{w}\right) = \Pr\left(W_{i,t-p:t} = \mathbf{w} \mid W_{i,1:t-p-1}, Y_{i,1:t}\left(W_{i,1:t-p-1}, \mathbf{w}\right)\right)$$

the assignment mechanism is known, by only outcomes along the realized path  $Y_{i,1:t}(w_{i,1:t}^{obs})$  are observed. Although one cannot compute  $p_{i,t-p}(\mathbf{w})$  for all assignment paths, one can instead compute the adapted propensity score along the **observed** assignment path  $p_{i,t-p}$  ( $w_{i,t-v;t}^{obs}$ ),

6-70 Week 6: DID and TWFE

### Assumption 6.1.25: probabilistic assignment (Bojinov et al., 2021)

Consider a potential outcome panel,  $\forall i \in [N], t \in [T], \mathbf{w} \in \mathcal{W}^{p+1}$ ,  $\exists C^L, C^U \in (0,1)$  s.t.  $C^L < p_{i,t-p}(\mathbf{w}) < C^U$ . This is also commonly known as the *overlap* or *common support* assumption

and all expectations  $\mathbb{E}(\cdot)$  are computed w.r.t. the probabilistic assignment mechanism, write  $\mathcal{F}_{i,t-p-1}$  as the filtration generated by  $W_{i,1:t-p-1}$  and  $\mathcal{F}_{1:N,t-p-1}$  as the filtration generated by  $W_{1:N,1:t-p-1}$ , and conditioning on  $W_{i,1:t-p-1}$  is the same as conditioning on both  $W_{i,1:t-p-1}$  and  $Y_{i,1:t-p-1}(W_{i,1:t-p-1})$ .

## Theorem 6.1.26: Estimation of $\tau_{i,t}$ (w, $\tilde{\mathbf{w}}$ ; p)

 $\forall \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}} \in \mathcal{W}^{p+1}$ , the nonparametric estimator of  $\tau_{i,t}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p)$  is

$$\hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) \coloneqq \left\{ \frac{Y_{i,t}\left(w_{i,1:t-p-1}^{obs}, \mathbf{w}\right) \mathbf{1}\left(w_{i,t-p:t}^{obs} = \mathbf{w}\right)}{p_{i,t-p}(\mathbf{w})} - \frac{Y_{i,t}\left(w_{i,1:t-p-1}^{obs}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}\right) \mathbf{1}\left(w_{i,t-p:t}^{obs} = \tilde{\mathbf{w}}\right)}{p_{i,t-p}(\tilde{\mathbf{w}})} \right\}$$

under individualistic assignments, the estimator simplifies to

$$\hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right) = \frac{y_{i,t}^{obs}\left\{\mathbf{1}\left(w_{i,t-p:t}^{obs} = \mathbf{w}\right) - \mathbf{1}\left(w_{i,t-p:t}^{obs} = \tilde{\mathbf{w}}\right)\right\}}{p_{i,t-p}\left(w_{i,t-p:t}^{obs}\right)}$$

for a potential outcome panel with an assignment that is both individualistic and probabilistic,  $\forall \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}} \in \mathbf{W}^{p+1}$ , we have

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)\mid\mathcal{F}_{i,t-p-1}\right] = \tau_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)$$

$$\operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)\mid\mathcal{F}_{i,t-p-1}\right) = \gamma_{i,t}^{2}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}}\right) - \tau_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)^{2} := \sigma_{i,t}^{2}$$

where

$$\gamma_{i,t}^{2}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right) = \frac{Y_{i,t}\left(w_{i,1:t-p-1}^{obs},\mathbf{w}\right)^{2}}{p_{i,t-n}(\mathbf{w})} + \frac{Y_{i,t}\left(w_{i,1:t-p-1}^{obs},\tilde{\mathbf{w}}\right)}{p_{i,t-n}(\tilde{\mathbf{w}})}$$

for distinct  $\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}, \overline{\mathbf{w}}, \hat{\mathbf{w}} \in \mathcal{W}^{p+1}$ 

$$\operatorname{Cov}\left(\hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right),\hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\overline{\mathbf{w}},\hat{\mathbf{w}};p\right)\mid\mathcal{F}_{i,t-p-1}\right)=-\tau_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)\tau_{i,t}\left(\overline{\mathbf{w}},\hat{\mathbf{w}};p\right)$$

and  $\hat{\tau}_{i,t}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}})$  and  $\hat{\tau}_{i,t}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}})$  are independent for  $i \neq j$  conditional on  $\mathcal{F}_{1:N,t-p-1}$ .

Theorem 6.1.26 states that  $\forall i, t$ , the error in estimating  $\tau_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)$  is a martingale difference sequence through time and conditionally independent across units. Var  $(\hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{i,t-p-1})$  depends on both  $\mathbf{w}$  and  $\tilde{\mathbf{w}}$  and generally can not be estimated, its upper bound  $\gamma_{i,t}^2\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)$  can be estimated as

$$\hat{\gamma}_{i,t}^{2}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right) = \frac{\left(y_{i,t}^{obs}\right)^{2}\left\{\mathbf{1}\left(w_{i,t-p:t}^{obs} = \mathbf{w}\right) + \mathbf{1}\left(w_{i,t-p:t}^{obs} = \tilde{\mathbf{w}}\right)\right\}}{p_{i,t-p}\left(w_{i,t-p:t}^{obs}\right)^{2}}$$

the estimator is unbiased<sup>45</sup>.

 $<sup>^{45}\</sup>gamma_{i,t}^{2}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)$  is different from the typical Neyman variance bound in a completely randomized experiment, where there is a

The martingale difference properties of the nonparametric estimator means that

$$\hat{\overline{\tau}}_{:t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) := \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)$$

$$\hat{\overline{\tau}}_{i,\cdot}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) := \frac{1}{T - p} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)$$

$$\hat{\overline{\tau}}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) := \frac{1}{N(T - p)} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \hat{\tau}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)$$

are all unbiased. Then the CLT are given as

### Theorem 6.1.27: CLT of $\hat{\tau}$

For a potential outcome panel with an individualistic and probabilistic assignment mechanism. Assume the potential outcomes are bounded, then  $\forall \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}} \in \mathcal{W}^{p+1}$ ,

$$\frac{\sqrt{N}\left\{\hat{\overline{\tau}}_{\cdot t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) - \overline{\tau}_{\cdot t}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)\right\}}{\sigma_{\cdot t}} \xrightarrow{d} N(0, 1) \qquad \text{as } N \to \infty$$

$$\frac{\sqrt{T - p}\left\{\hat{\overline{\tau}}_{i \cdot}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) - \overline{\tau}_{i \cdot}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)\right\}}{\sigma_{\cdot t}} \xrightarrow{d} N(0, 1) \qquad \text{as } T \to \infty$$

$$\frac{\sqrt{N(T - p)}\left\{\hat{\overline{\tau}}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right) - \overline{\tau}\left(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p\right)\right\}}{\sigma_{\cdot t}} \xrightarrow{d} N(0, 1) \qquad \text{as } NT \to \infty$$

where  $\sigma_{\cdot t}$ ,  $\sigma_{i\cdot}$ ,  $\sigma$  are the square root of the approportiate averages of  $\sigma_{i,t}^2$ , defined in Thm.6.1.26.

Likewise, for bounded potential outcomes with an individualistic and probabilistic assignment mechanism, the scaled variances are

$$N \times \operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\overline{\tau}}_{.t}\left(w, \tilde{w}; p\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N, t-p-1}\right) = \mathbb{E}\left[\sigma_{.t}^{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N, t-p-1}\right]$$
$$\left(T - p\right) \times \operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\overline{\tau}}_{i.}\left(w, \tilde{w}; p\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{i,0}\right) = \mathbb{E}\left[\sigma_{i.}^{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{i,0}\right]$$
$$N(T - p) \times \operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\overline{\tau}}\left(w, \tilde{w}; p\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N,0}\right) = \mathbb{E}\left[\sigma^{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N,0}\right]$$

and the estimators of the variance bounds of the averaged estimators are unbiased

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\left(\frac{1}{N}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\hat{\gamma}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)\right)\mid\mathcal{F}_{1:N,t-p-1}\right] = \frac{1}{N}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\gamma_{i,t}^{2}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)$$

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\left(\frac{1}{T-p}\sum_{t=p+1}^{T}\hat{\gamma}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right) - \frac{1}{T-p}\sum_{t=p+1}^{T}\gamma_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)\right)\mid\mathcal{F}_{i,0}\right] = 0$$

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\left(\frac{1}{N(T-p)}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\sum_{t=p+1}^{T}\hat{\gamma}_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right) - \frac{1}{N(T-p)}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\sum_{t=p+1}^{T}\gamma_{i,t}\left(\mathbf{w},\tilde{\mathbf{w}};p\right)\right)\mid\mathcal{F}_{1:N,0}\right] = 0$$

negative correlation between any two units' assignments since the total number of units assigned to each treatment is fixed. Here, all units' assignments are conditionally independent under individualistic assignments.

6-72 Week 6: DID and TWFE

and consistent

$$\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \gamma_{i,t} \left( \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p \right) - \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \gamma_{i,t}^{2} \left( \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p \right) \xrightarrow{p} 0 \qquad \text{as } N \to \infty$$

$$\frac{1}{T - p} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \gamma_{i,t} \left( \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p \right) - \frac{1}{T - p} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \gamma_{i,t}^{2} \left( \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p \right) \xrightarrow{p} 0 \qquad \text{as } T \to \infty$$

$$\frac{1}{N(T - p)} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \gamma_{i,t} \left( \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p \right) - \frac{1}{N(T - p)} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=p+1}^{T} \gamma_{i,t}^{2} \left( \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p \right) \xrightarrow{p} 0 \qquad \text{as } NT \to \infty$$

here is an important trade-off: increasing the lag p increases the estimator's variance, but reduces the dependence on the observed treatment path.

With CLT in Thm.6.1.27, one can conduct conservative inference for  $\overline{\tau}_{\cdot t}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p)$ ,  $\overline{\tau}_{i\cdot}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p)$  and  $\overline{\tau}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p)$ , alternatively, one can construct **exact** tests for sharp null hypothesis, for example,  $H_0: \overline{\tau}_{i,t}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p) = 0$ ,  $\forall \mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}, i \in [N]$  and specific t = 4. Here, all potential outcomes are known under such sharp null hypotheses, one can simulate the assignment path  $W_{i,t-p:t} \mid W_{i,1:t-p-1}^{obs}, y_{i,1:t-p-1}^{obs}$  for all i and compute  $\hat{\tau}_{i,t}(\mathbf{w}, \tilde{\mathbf{w}}; p)$  at each draw and simulate the exact distribution of any test statistics.

Now, focus on commonly used **linear** estimators (canomical unit fixed-effects estimator, two-way fixed effects estimator) under the potential outcomes panel model. For the linear potential outcome panel

$$Y_{i,t}(w_{i,1:t}) = \beta_{i,t,0}w_{i,t} + \dots + \beta_{i,t,t-1}w_{i,1} + \epsilon_{i,t}, \forall t \in [T], i \in [N]$$

where the nonstochastic coefficients  $\beta_{i,t,0:t-1}$  and nonstochastic error  $\epsilon_{i,t}$  do not depend upon treatments. Denote the within-period transformed variable as  $\dot{A}_{i,t} = A_{i,t} - \overline{A}_{\cdot t}$ , the within-unit transformed variable as  $\dot{A}_{i,t} = A_{i,t} - \overline{A}_{i\cdot}$ , and the within-unit and within-period transformed variable is  $\ddot{A}_{i,t} = (A_{i,t} - \overline{A}) - (\overline{A}_{\cdot t} - \overline{A}) - (\overline{A}_{\cdot t} - \overline{A})$ , then

• unit FE estimator  $\hat{\beta}_{UFE} = \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{Y}_{i,t} \mathring{W}_{i,t} / \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{W}_{i,t}^{2}$ : Define  $\mathring{\mu}_{i,t} := \mathbb{E}[\mathring{W}_{i,t} \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N,0,T}]$ ,  $\text{Var}(\mathring{W}_{i,t} \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N,0,T}) := \mathring{\sigma}_{W,i,t}^{2} < \infty$ ,  $\text{Cov}(\mathring{W}_{i,t}, \mathring{W}_{i,s} \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N,0,T}) := \mathring{\sigma}_{W,i,t,s}$ , and assume that

$$\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \beta_{i,t,s} \mathring{\sigma}_{W,i,t,s} \rightarrow \mathring{\kappa}_{W,\beta,t,s} \qquad \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathring{\sigma}_{W,i,t}^{2} \rightarrow \mathring{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2} \qquad \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \mathring{Y}_{i,t}(\mathbf{0}) \mathring{\mu}_{i,t} \rightarrow \mathring{\delta}_{t}, \forall t \in [T], s \leq t$$

then as  $N \to \infty$ ,

$$\hat{\beta}_{UFE} \xrightarrow{p} \frac{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\kappa}_{W,\beta,t,t}}{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2}} + \frac{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \sum_{s=1}^{t-1} \mathring{\kappa}_{W,\beta,t,s}}{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2}} + \frac{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\delta}_{t}}{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2}}$$

where the unit FE esimator is decomposed into 3 terms:

- $-\sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\kappa}_{W,\beta,t,t}/\sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2}$ : how contemporaneous dynamic causal coefficients covary with the within-unit transformed assignments
- $\sum_{t=1}^{T} \sum_{s=1}^{t-1} \hat{\kappa}_{W,\beta,t,s} / \sum_{t=1}^{T} \hat{\sigma}_{W,t}^2$ : how past causal coefficients covary with the within-unit transformed treatments due to dynamic causal effects
- $-\sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\delta}_t / \sum_{t=1}^{T} \mathring{\sigma}_{W,t}^2$ : error due to the possible relationship between the demaned counterfactual  $\ddot{Y}_{i,t}(\mathbf{0})$  and the demeaned treatment assignment<sup>46</sup>

 $<sup>^{46}</sup>Y_{i,t}(\mathbf{0}) = \alpha_i \Rightarrow \ddot{Y}_{i,t}(\mathbf{0}) = 0, \forall i \in [N], t \in [T],$  hence the error term is 0 when unit FEs correctly summarize the variation in the "control-only" counterfactual outcomes across units and time.

• **TWFE** estimator  $\hat{\beta}_{TWFE} = \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{Y}_{i,t} \ddot{W}_{i,t} / sum_{i=1}^{N} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{W}_{i,t}^{2}$ : Define  $\mathbb{E}(\ddot{W}_{i,t} \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N,0,T}) := \ddot{\mu}_{i,t}$ ,  $\text{Var}(\ddot{W}_{i,t} \mid \mathcal{F}_{1:N,0,T}) := \ddot{\sigma}_{W,i,t}^{2} < \infty$ ,  $\text{Cov}(\ddot{W}_{i,t}, \ddot{W}_{i,s}) := \ddot{\sigma}_{W,i,t,s}$ ,  $\forall i \in [N]$ ,  $t \in [T]$ , and assume that

$$\frac{1}{N}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\beta_{i,t,s}\ddot{\sigma}_{W,i,t,s}\rightarrow \ddot{\kappa}_{W,\beta,t,s} \qquad \frac{1}{N}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\ddot{\sigma}_{W,i,t}^{2}\rightarrow \ddot{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2} \qquad \frac{1}{N}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\ddot{Y}_{i,t}(\mathbf{0})\ddot{\mu}_{i,t}\rightarrow \ddot{\delta}_{t}, \forall t\in[T], s\leq t$$

then as  $N \to \infty$ 

$$\hat{\beta}_{UFE} \xrightarrow{p} \frac{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{\kappa}_{W,\beta,t,t}}{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2}} + \frac{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \sum_{s=1}^{t-1} \ddot{\kappa}_{W,\beta,t,s}}{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2}} + \frac{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{\delta}_{t}}{\sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{\sigma}_{W,t}^{2}}$$

and for the error term  $\sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{\delta}_t / \sum_{t=1}^{T} \ddot{\sigma}_{W,t}^2$ , for it to be 0, it is sufficient that the counterfactual outcome is additively separable into a time-specific and unit-specific effect,  $Y_{i,t}(\mathbf{0}) = \alpha_i + \lambda_t$ ,  $\forall i \in [N]$ ,  $t \in [T]$ , that is, when unit and time fixed effects are correctly summarize the variation in the "control-only" counterfactual outcomes across units and time.

#### 6.1.11.5 Robust methods

In practice, one might want to use conventional panel data methods (TWFE, etc.) even with experimental data, since the experiment implementation might be problematic, or the TWFE estimator could be more precise, especially in quasi-experimental settings.

Borusyak and Hull (2020) developed tools for estimating the causal effects of treatments/instruments that combine multiple sources of variation, according to a known formula<sup>47</sup>. Borusyak and Hull (2020)'s estimation tools focus on the such composite variables where some but not all of their determinants are generated by a true/natural experiment. This estimation solves the omitted variable bias (OVB) where different observations receive systematically different values of treatment due to non-random exposure to the shocks (determined by other components).

# **Example 6.1.28: Exogenous transportation shocks**

Let market access (MA) be a statistic capturing the average cost of transportation from region l to other regions of varying size, consider

$$\Delta \log V_t = \beta \Delta \log M A_l + \epsilon_l$$

where  $V_t$  is a regional outcome,  $\epsilon_l$  captures unobserved shocks to local productivity and amenities in region l between 2 periods.

Even when the treatment is random in place, some regions will see systematically higher MA growth due to their position in the country's economic geography:  $\Delta \log MA_l$  and  $\epsilon_l$  are not orthogonal. Borusyak and Hull (2020) propose that

• simulate MA growth across counterfactual draws of RCT to compute the expected MA growth  $\mu_l$  of each region, and recenter MA growth by substracting the expected growth:  $\tilde{z}_l = \Delta \log MA_l - \mu_l$ ,  $\tilde{z}_l$  can then be used as an instrument for  $\Delta \log MA_l$ 

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>47</sup> Some examples are: **spillover from an intervention** (the number of an individual's neighbors who were selected for the intervention, which combines variation in who was selected and who neighbors whom); **transportation infrastructure effects** (combination of the location and timing of transportation upgrades and the spatial distribution of economic activity); **linear shift-share**  $z_l = \sum_n w_{ln} g_n$  (average a set of national shocks  $g_n$  with a set of local employment share weights  $w_{ln}$ ; **eligibility of a public program** (jointly determiend by eligibility policy in an individual's state and demographics.))

6-74 Week 6: DID and TWFE

• this approach is valid when the exogeneity of shocks is ex ante plausible

Suppose the outcome  $y_l$  and treatment  $x_l$  are observed for  $l = 1, \dots, L$ , and the treatment effect of interest  $\beta$  gives

$$y_l = \beta x_l + \epsilon_l$$

where  $\epsilon_l$  is an unobserved residual. Here,  $(y_l, x_l)$  are not assumed to be i.i.d. To estimate  $\beta$ , one can construct a candidate instrument

$$z_l = f_l(g; w)$$

where g summarizes variation from exogenous shocks, w are predetermined variables related to shock exposure,  $\{f_l(\cdot)\}_{l=1}^L$  is a set of known non-stochastic functions. Then,

### Assumption 6.1.29: Borusyak and Hull (2020)'s Assumptions

**A1** Shock exogeneity:  $g \perp \epsilon \mid w^a$ 

**A2** Weak shock exogeneity:  $\mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon_l \mid g, w\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon_l \mid w\right]$  a.s.  $\forall l; \mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon_l \epsilon_m \mid g, w\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon_l \epsilon_m \mid w\right]$  a.s.  $\forall l, m$ 

<sup>a</sup>The shock exogeneity combines two conditions: exclusion restriction that the realization of shocks affect outcomes via  $x_l$  only; the as-good-as-random assignment of shocks w.r.t.  $\epsilon$ .

Consider an IV regression of  $y_l$  on  $x_l$  with  $z_l$  as an instrument:  $z_l$  is related to the treatment and orthogonal to the structural residual:

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}z_{l}x_{l}\right]\neq0\qquad\qquad\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}z_{l}\epsilon_{l}\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}z_{l}y_{l}\right]-\beta\cdot\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}z_{l}x_{l}\right]=0$$

and the IV estimator

$$\hat{\beta} = \frac{1/L \sum_{l} z_{l} y_{l}}{1/L \sum_{l} z_{l} x_{l}}$$

is biased due to the OVB problem: exogeneity of the shocks underlying  $z_l$  is governed by the expected instrument  $\mu_l$ :

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}z_{l}\epsilon_{l}\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}\mathbb{E}\left[f_{l}(g;w)\epsilon_{l}\mid w\right]\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}\mu_{l}\mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon_{l}\mid w\right]\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}\mu_{l}\epsilon_{l}\right]$$

therefore, when  $\mu_l$  is endogenous,  $\beta$  cannot be identified just by the instrument  $z_l$ . Under both strong and weak exogeneity assumption (6.1.29), let  $\tilde{z}_l = z_l - \mu_l$ , then

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_{l}\tilde{z}_{l}\epsilon_{l}\right]=0$$

s.t.  $\beta$  is identified by the re-centered instrument  $\tilde{z}_l$  provided  $\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{L}\sum_l \tilde{z}_l x_l\right]$ . To measure this expected instrument, Borusyak and Hull (2020) propose the speicification of counterfactual shocks: denote the shock assignment process by the conditional distribution of  $G(g \mid w)$ , if assume

#### Assumption 6.1.30: Borusyak and Hull (2020)'s Assumption

 $G(g \mid w)$  is known in the support of w

then the expected instrument can be calculated as

$$\mu_l = \int f_l(\gamma; w) \, \mathrm{d}G(\gamma \mid w)$$

when the shocks are determined by a known randomization protocol (RCT),  $G(\cdot)$  is straight forward; when randomization of shocks occurs naturally,  $G(\cdot)$  can come from the knowledge; in observational data, specifying  $G(g \mid w)$  makes explicit the features of shocks.

**Inference** To make meaningful inferences, consider a  $\mathcal{T}(g, y - bx, w)$  rationalized by  $\hat{\beta}$  as

## Lemma 6.1.31: Borusyak and Hull (2020)'s Lemma 2

Let  $T = \mathcal{T}(g, y - bx, w)$  and  $T^* = \mathcal{T}(g^*, y - bx, w)$ , where  $g^*$  is distributed according to  $G(\cdot \mid w)$ , independent of (g, x, y), conditional on w. Define the Hodges-Lehmann estimator as  $b \in \mathbb{R}$  that solve  $T = \mathbb{E}\left[T^* \mid y, x, w\right]$ . Then the recentered IV estimator is the Hodges-Lehmann estimator associated with  $T = \frac{1}{L} \sum_{l} \left( f_l(g, w) - \mu_l \right) \left( y_l - bx_l \right)$ 

That is, the recentered IV estimator of  $\beta$  equates the sample covariance between the recentered instrument  $\tilde{z}_l$  and implied residual  $y_l - bx_l$  with the expectation of its randomization distribution.

The inference results can also be used to perform falsification tests:

- for any variable  $r_l$  satisfying  $g \perp r \mid w$ ,  $\tilde{z}_l$  is orthogonal to  $r_l$ : one can check if the sample covariance  $\frac{1}{l} \sum_l \tilde{z}_l r_l$  is sufficiently close to 0
- · falsification tests are useful that
  - when  $r_l$  is a lagged outcome or a proxy for  $\epsilon_l$ , one can use RI for placebo and covariate balance tests of A1 6.1.29
  - RI test will have power to reject false specifications of the shock assignment process (6.1.30)

To minimize the asymptotic variance of the recentered IV, one can use the following instrument<sup>48</sup>:

$$z^* = \mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon \epsilon' \mid w\right]^{-1} \left(\mathbb{E}[x \mid g, w] - \mathbb{E}[x \mid w]\right)$$

This optimal instrument satisfies

$$z^* = \left( \operatorname{Var} \left[ \epsilon \mid w \right] \right)^{-1} \left[ \left( \mathbb{E} \left[ x \mid g, w \right] - \mathbb{E} \left[ x \mid w \right] \right) - \nu \rho \mathbb{E} \left[ \epsilon \mid w \right] \right]$$

where

$$\rho = \frac{\mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon \mid w\right]' \Omega \tilde{z}}{\mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon \mid w\right]' \Omega^{-1} \mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon \mid w\right]} \qquad \qquad \nu = \frac{\mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon \mid w\right] \Omega^{-1} \mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon \mid w\right]}{1 + \mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon \mid w\right]' \Omega^{-1} \mathbb{E}\left[\epsilon \mid w\right]}$$

 $\rho \mathbb{E}[\epsilon \mid w]$  is the  $\Omega^{-1}$ -weighted projection of  $\tilde{z}$  on  $\mathbb{E}[\epsilon \mid w]$ . This gives an intuitive 4-step description of  $z^*$ :

- 1 take the best predictor of treatment given by the shocks and predetermined variables  $\mathbb{E}\left[x\mid g,w\right]$
- 2 receter this predictor by  $\mathbb{E}[x \mid w]$  to remove the potential OVB from non-random shock exposure, get  $\tilde{z}$
- 3 partially residualizes the recentered instrument on the predictable component of the residual  $\mathbb{E}[x \mid w]$
- 4 adjust for the residual variance  $\Omega$ , as in GLS.

where Step 2 and 3 are new to address the potential endogeneity of w.

Here, Step 1 is trivial when  $x_l$  is a function of (g, w):  $\mathbb{E}\left[x_l \mid g, w\right] = x_l$ ; otherwise,  $z_l$  can be given by an economic model: if  $x_l = \tilde{f_l}(g, w, u)$  for a known  $\tilde{f_l}(\cdot)$  and a set of unobserved shocks u, a reasonable stand-in for  $\mathbb{E}[x_l \mid g, w]$  can be obtained by  $\tilde{f_l}(g, w, 0)$ . Step 3 and 4 might be difficult to implement, one need to control predetermined variables in Step 3 to improve efficiency by reducing residual variance. Step 4 is more standard for correcting heteroskedasticity and mutual correlation of residuals.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>48</sup>Such optimal instument may not be feasible in practice, but still provides guidance for constructing recentered instrument.

6-76 Week 6: DID and TWFE

### **Practical applications**

• **Transportation infrastructure** instrument MA growth by recentered MA growth, the recentering is done by permutating the opening status of transportation<sup>49</sup>.

• **Policy eligibility** suppose  $\beta$  captures the causal effect of eligibility  $x_l \in \{0,1\}$  of individual l for a policy, eligibility is a function of regional government policy and individual characteristics. One way to debias is to use a regional generosity  $h(g_n)$  of state n as the instrument (the policies arise in a natural experiment). Borusyak and Hull (2020) suggest to write the eligibility as  $x_l = f(g_{state_l}; v_l)$  where  $v_l$  denotes the demographics relevant to the policies, and  $f(\cdot)$  is a known mapping. One can debias the OLS of  $y_l$  on  $x_l$  by calculate each individual's expected eligibility over the possible policy counterfactuals:

$$\mu_l = \mathbb{E}[x_l \mid w] = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{n=1}^{N} f(g_n; v_l)$$

, and either instrumenting  $x_l$  by  $\tilde{z}_l = x_l - \mu_l$  or controlling for  $\mu_l$ .  $\tilde{z}_l$  also increases power comparing to the other way comes from the better first-stage prediction of  $x_l$ .

- Spillover regressions
- Shift-share instruments
- Model-implied optimal instrumethts
- Other spatial instruments

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>49</sup>In the example, Borusyak and Hull (2020) propose to use certain features of the transportation network, for example, the timing of line completion, as realizations of a natural experiment.

# References

Alberto Abadie. Semiparametric difference-in-differences estimators. *The review of economic studies*, 72(1): 1–19, 2005.

- Alberto Abadie and Guido Imbens. Simple and bias-corrected matching estimators for average treatment effects, 2002.
- Alberto Abadie and Jérémy L'hour. A penalized synthetic control estimator for disaggregated data. *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 116(536):1817–1834, 2021.
- Alberto Abadie, Alexis Diamond, and Jens Hainmueller. Synthetic control methods for comparative case studies: Estimating the effect of california's tobacco control program. *Journal of the American statistical Association*, 105(490):493–505, 2010.
- Muhammad Amjad, Devavrat Shah, and Dennis Shen. Robust synthetic control. *Journal of Machine Learning Research*, 19(22):1–51, 2018.
- Muhammad Amjad, Vishal Misra, Devavrat Shah, and Dennis Shen. mrsc: Multi-dimensional robust synthetic control. *Proceedings of the ACM on Measurement and Analysis of Computing Systems*, 3(2):1–27, 2019.
- Dmitry Arkhangelsky and Guido Imbens. Causal models for longitudinal and panel data: A survey. Technical report, National Bureau of Economic Research, 2023.
- Dmitry Arkhangelsky and Guido W Imbens. Doubly robust identification for causal panel data models. *The Econometrics Journal*, 25(3):649–674, 2022.
- Susan Athey and Guido W Imbens. Identification and inference in nonlinear difference-in-differences models. *Econometrica*, 74(2):431–497, 2006.
- Susan Athey and Guido W Imbens. Design-based analysis in difference-in-differences settings with staggered adoption. *Journal of Econometrics*, 226(1):62–79, 2022.
- Susan Athey, Guido W Imbens, and Stefan Wager. Approximate residual balancing: debiased inference of average treatment effects in high dimensions. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society Series B: Statistical Methodology*, 80(4):597–623, 2018.
- Susan Athey, Mohsen Bayati, Nikolay Doudchenko, Guido Imbens, and Khashayar Khosravi. Matrix completion methods for causal panel data models. *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 116(536): 1716–1730, 2021.
- Heejung Bang and James M Robins. Doubly robust estimation in missing data and causal inference models. *Biometrics*, 61(4):962–973, 2005.
- Eli Ben-Michael, Avi Feller, and Jesse Rothstein. The augmented synthetic control method. *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 116(536):1789–1803, 2021.
- Iavor Bojinov, Ashesh Rambachan, and Neil Shephard. Panel experiments and dynamic causal effects: A finite population perspective. *Quantitative Economics*, 12(4):1171–1196, 2021.
- Iavor Bojinov, David Simchi-Levi, and Jinglong Zhao. Design and analysis of switchback experiments. *Management Science*, 69(7):3759–3777, 2023.
- Stéphane Bonhomme, Thibaut Lamadon, and Elena Manresa. Discretizing unobserved heterogeneity. *Econometrica*, 90(2):625–643, 2022.

6-78 Week 6: DID and TWFE

Stéphane Bonhomme and Ulrich Sauder. Recovering Distributions in Difference-in-Differences Models: A Comparison of Selective and Comprehensive Schooling. *The Review of Economics and Statistics*, 93(2): 479–494, 05 2011. ISSN 0034-6535. doi: 10.1162/REST\_a\_00164. URL https://doi.org/10.1162/REST\_a\_00164.

- Kirill Borusyak and Peter Hull. Non-random exposure to exogenous shocks: Theory and applications. Technical report, National Bureau of Economic Research, 2020.
- Kirill Borusyak, Xavier Jaravel, and Jann Spiess. Revisiting event-study designs: robust and efficient estimation. *Review of Economic Studies*, page rdae007, 2024.
- Brantly Callaway and Tong Li. Quantile treatment effects in difference in differences models with panel data. *Quantitative Economics*, 10(4):1579–1618, 2019.
- Brantly Callaway and Pedro HC Sant'Anna. Difference-in-differences with multiple time periods. *Journal of econometrics*, 225(2):200–230, 2021.
- Brantly Callaway, Tong Li, and Tatsushi Oka. Quantile treatment effects in difference in differences models under dependence restrictions and with only two time periods. *Journal of Econometrics*, 206 (2):395–413, 2018. ISSN 0304-4076. doi: https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2018.06.008. URL https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0304407618301027. Special issue on Advances in Econometric Theory: Essays in honor of Takeshi Amemiya.
- V Chernozhukov, K Wuthrich, and Y Zhu. Practical and robust t-test based inference for synthetic control and related methods. arxiv e-prints. *arXiv preprint arXiv:1812.10820*, 2019.
- Victor Chernozhukov, Denis Chetverikov, Mert Demirer, Esther Duflo, Christian Hansen, and Whitney Newey. Double/debiased/neyman machine learning of treatment effects. *American Economic Review*, 107 (5):261–265, 2017.
- Victor Chernozhukov, Kaspar Wüthrich, and Yinchu Zhu. An exact and robust conformal inference method for counterfactual and synthetic controls. *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 116(536):1849–1864, 2021.
- Clément De Chaisemartin and Xavier d'Haultfoeuille. Two-way fixed effects estimators with heterogeneous treatment effects. *American economic review*, 110(9):2964–2996, 2020.
- Peng Ding and Fan Li. A bracketing relationship between difference-in-differences and lagged-dependent-variable adjustment. *Political Analysis*, 27(4):605–615, 2019.
- Nikolay Doudchenko and Guido W Imbens. Balancing, regression, difference-in-differences and synthetic control methods: A synthesis. Technical report, National Bureau of Economic Research, 2016.
- Simon Freyaldenhoven, Christian Hansen, and Jesse M Shapiro. Pre-event trends in the panel event-study design. *American Economic Review*, 109(9):3307–3338, 2019.
- Florian F Gunsilius. Distributional synthetic controls. Econometrica, 91(3):1105–1117, 2023.
- Jinyong Hahn. On the role of the propensity score in efficient semiparametric estimation of average treatment effects. *Econometrica*, pages 315–331, 1998.
- James Heckman, Hidehiko Ichimura, Jeffrey Smith, and Petra Todd. Characterizing selection bias using experimental data. *Econometrica*, pages 1017–1098, 1998a.
- James J Heckman, Hidehiko Ichimura, and Petra Todd. Matching as an econometric evaluation estimator. *The review of economic studies*, 65(2):261–294, 1998b.

Keisuke Hirano, Guido W Imbens, and Geert Ridder. Efficient estimation of average treatment effects using the estimated propensity score. *Econometrica*, 71(4):1161–1189, 2003.

- Kosuke Imai, In Song Kim, and Erik H Wang. Matching methods for causal inference with time-series cross-sectional data. *American Journal of Political Science*, 67(3):587–605, 2023.
- Guido W Imbens. Nonparametric estimation of average treatment effects under exogeneity: A review. *Review of Economics and statistics*, 86(1):4–29, 2004.
- Paul R Rosenbaum and Donald B Rubin. The central role of the propensity score in observational studies for causal effects. *Biometrika*, 70(1):41–55, 1983.
- Donald B Rubin. The use of matched sampling and regression adjustment to remove bias in observational studies. *Biometrics*, pages 185–203, 1973.
- Pedro HC Sant'Anna and Jun Zhao. Doubly robust difference-in-differences estimators. *Journal of economet- rics*, 219(1):101–122, 2020.
- Liyang Sun and Sarah Abraham. Estimating dynamic treatment effects in event studies with heterogeneous treatment effects. *Journal of econometrics*, 225(2):175–199, 2021.
- Jeffrey M Wooldridge. Simple approaches to nonlinear difference-in-differences with panel data. *The Econometrics Journal*, 26(3):C31–C66, 2023.
- Ruoxuan Xiong, Susan Athey, Mohsen Bayati, and Guido Imbens. Optimal experimental design for staggered rollouts. *Management Science*, 70(8):5317–5336, 2024.
- Yiqing Xu. Causal inference with time-series cross-sectional data: a reflection. *Available at SSRN 3979613*, 2023.
- Andrew Ying, Wang Miao, Xu Shi, and Eric J Tchetgen Tchetgen. Proximal causal inference for complex longitudinal studies. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society Series B: Statistical Methodology*, 85(3):684–704, 2023.